

***The Gospel  
of the  
Kingdom***

REDEMPTION  PRESS

---



***The Gospel  
of the  
Kingdom***

**By the Lord Jesus Christ**

**through his servant-sons**

**who are learning to walk together in his kingdom**



The purpose of this book is to be a blessing to the Lord Jesus Christ in his many-membered body. If you are a member of his body, then you may freely copy and distribute any or all of this book as Jesus Christ (the head of his body) leads you, provided that

- you are acting in a personal capacity, not as representing any human organization (religious or otherwise),
- you make no net financial gain, and
- you make no textual modifications.

If you are not a member of the body of the Lord Jesus Christ (or if you are in doubt of your membership in him), then you may make one copy of any or all the material in this book for your own personal use only. (Perhaps, in reading it, your status here may change.)

If a human (church) organization wishes to distribute this work, please contact me for authorization.

© Paul A. Lindberg 1989. Edit version 11/2/16. All rights reserved except as noted above.

Published by Redemption Press, PO Box 427. Enumclaw, WA 98022  
Toll Free (844) 2REDEEM (273-3336)

Redemption Press is honored to present this title in partnership with the author. The views expressed or implied in this work are those of the author. Redemption Press provides our imprint seal representing design excellence, creative content, and high quality production. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any way by any means – electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording, or otherwise – without the prior permission of the copyright holder, except as provided by USA copyright law.

ISBN 13: 978-1-63232-485-X (Print)

ISBN 13: 978-1-63232-486-X (ePub)

ISBN 13: 978-1-63232-487-X (Mobi)

Library of Congress Card Catalogue Number – Yet to be determined.



# ***The Gospel of the Kingdom***

## ***Introduction***

*What is the Gospel of the Kingdom?*

The *gospel* is simply the “good news.”

The *kingdom* is the reign of the king, the Lord Jesus Christ.

So the Gospel of the Kingdom is the good news that the Lord Jesus Christ is, right now, reigning in my life, accomplishing his perfect will in and through me (and each of his saints)!

Now, that is a big statement. You may be quick to ask about my sins? My failures? My weaknesses and imperfections? Perhaps you think that the Lord Jesus Christ needs to spend a long time (even a lifetime) perfecting me through suffering before he could actually use me to accomplish any of his perfect will and purposes.

Well, slow down a bit, my friend. I’ve done plenty of wrestling with sin and satan, too. But to claim that God cannot accomplish any perfect works in me because I personally am not yet perfected, is *false humility* sent by satan himself, intended to keep the sons of God from doing the will of God on the earth.

Instead, I reckon my flesh nature to be crucified, dead, and buried  
with my Lord Jesus Christ, and I look to him to live through me  
and to accomplish his perfect will and purposes through me.

Yes, even right now, as I write.

In other words, I am a believer. I have chosen to believe the word of God, even when it seems to contradict the physical realm I see around me. His word is truth! He speaks to me, just as he has to all of his saints throughout the ages. He is still the same God that he always has been, and he still wants to communicate with and through his precious ones. He has asked me to write this book, and has promised to guide me by his Holy Spirit. Here is my response:

*Oh, my Lord Jesus Christ, I belong to you, for you paid the ultimate price of the law’s demands with your own blood, when you died on the Roman cross in my place. You have already won the victory over satan, and have delivered me from the bondage of sin and satan’s kingdom of sin. By your perfect sacrifice, I am this day totally free from sin’s domination, free to hear clearly from you, free to learn of your wisdom and your ways and to do your perfect will.*

*I come to you now, my Lord Jesus Christ, and ask you for the words to write.*

*The right words to communicate your “good news,” the Gospel of the Kingdom.*

*I come humbly, for in myself I am worth nothing. Yet I come boldly,*

*for your Holy Spirit in me has bid me come,*

*and you, even through my weakness, can do all things by your righteousness and perfection.*

*Let this book be a blessing from you to your people,  
in perfect accord with your thoughts and intents for your precious ones:  
all those who have chosen to acknowledge you as king.*

***We praise you, Oh Lord Jesus Christ, for you have done all things well!***

Amen. So it is and so it shall ever be.





# ***The Gospel of the Kingdom***

## ***Preface***

**This is a book which speaks to the spirit**, rather than just the human intellect. I can't really claim authorship, though God knows I've tried several times, because the Holy Spirit will not let me. He is a jealous God, and I joyfully acknowledge that he has written this in spite of (and sometimes in direct opposition to) my own human intellect. This is his work. I give up trying to support it or defend it, or even fully understand it, as I give up trying to claim any glory of authorship.

If you really want to know a little about myself, for whatever that's worth, see my testimony at the end of the book. But as for how you accept (or don't accept) this book, I feel that you would be making a mistake if you were to judge it on the basis of human knowledge. The more you know about me, and the more you know the doctrines and religious traditions of churchmen, the more difficult it could be for you to simply receive the impartation of spirit that the Holy Spirit desires for you from this book.

**For those of you who have already entered into the kingdom of God**; You will have no problem. You are already believers. Just enjoy it! Read to receive whatever the Holy Spirit has to say to you through it, because your heart has already been tuned to hear only from him through any of his humble vessels. You will have no condemnation in your hearts against what might be missing, inaccurate, or beyond your understanding, because you already know that there is no condemnation in Christ Jesus. You remember that like you, I am still growing in the manifold wisdom and grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, so this Gospel of the Kingdom is growing as well.

**For those of you who have not yet entered into the kingdom**, I encourage you to be careful how you respond to this book. I am aware that there are things here which will be a stumbling block to those who are motivated by an intellectual understanding of the religious doctrines and traditions of today (ie: the knowledge of good and evil). There are more "Pharisees" among the religious establishment today than there were in Jesus' time, and they are just as eager to crucify him afresh within his saints who have chosen to walk with him, seeking first his kingdom and his righteousness.

So please bear in mind: this book was not written for the Pharisees to judge or criticize according to the "*tree of the knowledge of good and evil*"; they will do that, but I will neither debate with them nor try to defend what the Holy Spirit has given. Instead this book was written from the perspective of one already walking in God's kingdom, so that you who have not yet entered in can catch the vision from the Holy Spirit and receive the power to become saints of God.

Each lesson builds on the last, defining its terms. I urge you, therefore, to begin reading with the first volume "Entering the kingdom," with the prayer that the Holy Spirit will speak to your heart as you read, rather than merely trying to understand the words with your mind. In the physical realm, men must understand in order to believe, but in the spirit realm, faith comes first, then obedience, then understanding follows. God really does have a perfect kingdom of peace and righteousness, but only believers – those with the simple faith of a child – can enter in.

As you read, you will notice the simple dialog between the saint (on the left) and the Lord Jesus Christ (on the right). The “I” on the left is not myself; it is any saint who is learning how to walk with God in his kingdom of righteousness, justice, love, joy, and peace. It may be helpful to read aloud between two people, one taking the left column, the other responding with the right, so the message can come through more clearly.

Bear in mind, the saint, at least at the beginning, is a mere babe in Christ. Picture a very little child coming to sit at the feet of Jesus, eager to learn wisdom and to express his or her love for him. That’s the picture I used as I was writing.

Consider this book as a primer. Just a children’s book for baby Christians. The problem here is that no matter how mature in Christ we think we are, to God we are barely beginners – or pre-born infants still in the womb – from God’s eternity perspective. I include myself in this. But that is not an indictment against anyone. The Kingdom of God has always been far bigger and better than any of us could ever ask or imagine.

For those scholars who wish to do further research, I have added an index of common terms at the end of this book. However, please just ignore it, at least until you have read the book. Most people will never need this index, as the Holy Spirit will become your “index.” You see, an index is more of a mental thing. The Spirit flies high above our mental understanding.

Similarly, I have also added a cross reference of the major Scripture passages at the end of this book. Again, do not start there! Notice I didn’t even list them in the Table of Contents. The Bible references are not needed until you first receive the impartation of Spirit – then it will be good to go back to verify that it really is all firmly based on Scripture. But once you have read this book, you will see the Scriptures with “new eyes.”

Capitalization was a huge problem. I originally capitalized everything referring to the Almighty. *Our God is an Awesome God and His Holy Name is Majestic in Power and Glory. The kingdoms of men pale before His Everlasting Kingdom of Love, Wisdom, Justice, and Mercy, for He is Good and His Name is our Peace and Joy. Thus He is the Way, the Truth, and the Life, and He has become the Comforter, Guide, and Friend of His Saints.*

Do you see how intrusive all those capitols can be? Like road-bumps when we’re trying to read. So except for the actual names of God, I took them out – including the title God gave Lucifer: satan. I even took out capitalization of personal pronouns of God (you, your, etc.). I use them so much that it was too distracting to the message.

So here it is; a book the Lord has led me to call *The Gospel of the Kingdom*. May it be as much a blessing to you as it has been to me, and as I believe it is to “many of his servant-sons who are learning to walk together in his kingdom.”

Paul A. Lindberg

# Table of Contents

## Volume 1 - Entering the Kingdom 3

Praise and Worship	5
Righteousness	6
Peace	7
Humility	8
Love	9
Grace	11
Mercy	12
Justice	13
Judgment	14
Sin	15
Health	17
Physical Body	19
Law	21
Relationship	25
Joy	26
Faith	27
Suffering	29
Reaching the Lost	30
Discipline, Testing	31
Baptism of Fire	32
Sabbath Rest	33
Sabbath Rest II	35

## Volume 2 - Growing in the Kingdom 37

Prayer	39
Peace II	41
Judgment II	42
Grace II	43
Fellowship	44
Joy II	45
Time, Temporal	47
Eternity	48
Life and Death	49
Sleep, Physical Death	50
Heaven and Hell	51
Angels and Demons	52
Spiritual Warfare	54
Discerning the Body	56
Futility	58
Creation	59
Free Will	61
Freedom	63
Bondage	64
Doctrine	65
Government	67
Kingdom Basics	69

## Volume 3 - Dwelling in the Kingdom 71

Man	73
Faith II	74
Sovereignty	76
Building the Kingdom	78
Open Hearts	80
Mission	81
Pure Hearts	82
Kingdom Relationships	83
Adam	85
Oneness	87
Lordship	89
Light and Darkness	91
Truth	93
Scripture	94
Error	96
Mystery	98
Freedom II	99
Father's Heart	100
Peace III	101
Community	102
Life and Death II	105
Spirit, Soul, and Body	107

## Volume 4 - Maturing in the Kingdom 111

Prayer II	113
Sons of God	116
Suffering II	119
Worship in Action	121
Holy, Holy, Holy	123
Salvation	124
Lamb's Book of Life	125
Sheep and Goats	128
The Lake of Fire	129
Heaven and Hell II	130
Paradise	131
Animals	132
The Sword	133
Home	135
Shepherd	137
Fear	139
Sabbath Rest III	142
Law II	143
Thanksgiving	146
Unity	147
Fasting and Intercession	150
Good News	152



# *The Gospel of the Kingdom*

*Volume 1*

**Entering  
the  
Kingdom**



Lord Jesus, I am come to sit at your feet and worship you.

How may I best worship you?

I love to study your nature and character, and your thoughts and ways are life and strength to me as I feast continually on your living word. But how can I reflect your glory?

How does singing praise songs fit into all this?

Do you mean that praise songs mostly benefit me, rather than bless you?

So singing praises without resulting actions is like faith without works: dead. Right?

Wonderful! Then singing praises is always a benefit to us both!

Thank you, my Lord Jesus Christ! My heart continually sings your praises in my spirit, and I am learning how to let these praises ring through the rest of my being as I go about my daily life.

You are most welcome, my son. I am pleased that you come, and I receive your love and worship with great joy.

You best worship me by learning of my nature and character, that you may think my thoughts and understand my ways. The result is: you are transformed to become like me. As you become more and more like me, you bring me great worship by reflecting my glory on my earth, to my precious creation.

The greatest praise of all is that you do the will of my Father in the same way I did when I was on the earth. This brings me glory as the earth becomes aware of the true source of your good works: that is, my life being lived through you.

Praise songs are good when they become true expressions of the heart and not merely the mind or emotions. When they are sung in response to a transforming revelation of my nature and character to your heart, they become a real assistance to your faith.

As your faith is strengthened in song, you are filled with my Spirit and empowered to do my will. This blesses me.

Not exactly. You tend to think of the Father's will as just some activity for you to figure out and struggle to do. In reality, Father's will is mostly a state of *being* filled with my Spirit – a state of *being* transformed into my image. Father's will is always accomplished in you as you live continually filled with my Spirit.

Be careful! Most praises I hear are merely a temporary emotional high, and the singer leaving is no more full of my Spirit than when he came. This saddens me, because it gives a satisfied feeling and an illusion of benefit, without the reality of inner transformation. Sing from your heart, or not at all.

Yes, and that delights me! For it is my Spirit within you that brings forth pure worship as my Father's will is accomplished in your life.

Lord Jesus, I have come to sit at your feet and learn your wisdom.

Welcome, my son! I love to give you wisdom, because I know you come with true faith to receive. In what may I instruct you?

I want to know of your righteousness, Lord.  
Yes, Lord.

My righteousness? Are you sure?  
Are you very sure?

You know how I long for your righteousness, Lord. I hunger and thirst for it continually.

How sincerely do you want to know about my righteousness?

Lord, I do seek first your kingdom and your righteousness. I want it more than anything else in my life.

That is good, because it will cost you everything else in your life, including your life. I Am my righteousness, and there is no righteousness on earth but mine. To know my righteousness you must be filled with me, and to be filled with me you must be dead to self and to all unrighteousness. Now, do you still want to know my righteousness?

Yes, Lord. I don't care how much it costs, but I will be satisfied with nothing less than all you have promised, and you did promise that those who hunger and thirst for righteousness shall be satisfied.

Then give me your heart, and allow me to be absolute lord and master over every area of your life, including all of your ambitions, your ego, your fleshly lusts and appetites, your rights and expectations, your habits and conditionings, your possessions, your job, your loved ones, yes, even your family and your own life as well. Give me unconditional permission to do as I will in all these areas, and you shall know of my righteousness.

I can't do that Lord. I want to, but I honestly can't.

You have spoken well, for I know the depth of your heart better than you. No one can, by force of his human will, die to his own flesh nature. However, I am able to search the heart of man and cleanse it of all unrighteousness by the power of my shed blood. But first I must send the baptism of fire, to burn up your old nature. Are you willing to submit?

Yes, Lord, you have my full permission. Send your fire. Only, please, be gentle, and give me grace to bear it. I am overwhelmed by the weakness and foolishness of my flesh nature. I long for your righteousness, but I sense that in my humanness I can never contain it.

I am very pleased, my son! I am doing all that I have spoken. Consider that flesh nature dead and buried with me, for it is only my life in you that can contain my righteousness. You shall find my righteousness a continual joy and delight; never a burden. My life lived through you results in your being and doing exactly what is right at all times and in all circumstances. That is my righteousness.

Thank you my Lord. I joyfully receive it!



Lord Jesus, I have come to sit at your feet, to learn of your peace. I have been troubled and busy, and have gotten anxious and upset these last few days, and I'm very sorry that it has hindered our relationship.

Only a little, Lord?

I am willing to receive as much as you will share with me. Please expand my faith to be able to handle it.

Yes, my Lord, but only because I know that is your will for me.

Wow, Lord! I am trying to believe. Please help my faith! That does not seem to agree with what I see all around me, especially after the last few days of trouble. How does all that make up your peace?

Uh, no Lord. I'm sorry, I forgot. Thank you for the anxiousness and trouble. I do know that they were sent for my discipline, and that all things work together for good in me, for you only are good. I love your law, and I love your discipline, for I know you have chosen me and are working out your eternal purposes in me.

Thank you, my Lord. What a joy! I do will to believe; please create in me the reality of this faith in my daily experience.

Praise you, Oh Lord Jesus Christ, for all that you are and all that you have done! Truly, you are my peace.

I gladly forgive you, and eagerly restore the joy of our relationship. I take greater delight in our love relationship than you realize. Now, relax and bask in my love, and I will teach you a little about my peace.

My peace is far beyond human understanding. Do you really think that you could handle it all in one morning?

[Laughing] That's one of the things I like about you. You are always so bold to take all that I am willing to give, and then some!

It is indeed! Here is my peace: I have created all things, yes all things, perfectly in line with my Father's will, and it is all very good. I have defeated satan and destroyed all his works, and have not only defeated but also abolished even death itself. I have brought everything in the universe into perfect alignment with my Father's Plan of the Ages. I am now ruling over every living thing in my perfect kingdom of righteousness. Nothing – not one thing – can happen in all of my creation except at my command. And now, you are my righteousness I send to my earth. Do you believe that?

Did you remember to thank me for your recent anxiousness and trouble? Did it occur to you that I sent it for you to learn about my peace?

You are forgiven. Now rest in my completed works, and receive my peace. I do now with these words give you the faith to believe all that I have ever promised: all that I am, and all that I ever said I would be or do. In my sight, it is all a present reality, for all my works were completed from the beginning of time. I in my Father am at rest. As you learn to believe the words you have just spoken, you enter into my Sabbath Rest and experience my peace.

In your "daily experience" (your words for chance circumstances, but in reality every situation I send your way) you experience my peace when you remember who I am, stop to appreciate what I have done, and give thanks.

Lord Jesus, I come to sit at your feet to learn from you. I bow before you in deep humility, and with gratefulness in my heart that you have bid me come.

I think so. Isn't that recognizing my own unworthiness, submitting my will to yours, and giving you the glory for the results?

Uh, is it repentance? or waiting on you in all things?

Oh, I get it. After recognizing my own unworthiness, I recognize your worthiness in me! "I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me." [Philippians 4:13]

How can boldness be humble?

If that is false humility, how can I avoid it? How can I be truly humble in the way I live and pray?

Thank you, my Lord. You are my life, my strength, my all. You are truly sufficient in me to accomplish anything and everything that you wish. And you are doing it! Thank you! What a joy it is to receive your humility, so that you may do your will and bring forth your glory in me. I return unto you all glory and praise for ever and ever!

You are my special joy when you respond to my bidding! Welcome, my son! Lets talk about that humility that I have given you. Do you know what it means?

That's very close, but you've missed a step. Can you figure it out?

Those are aspects of the first two items. You can't recognize your unworthiness without repentance; you can't submit your will to mine without waiting on me to know my will. I'll give you a clue. So far, you have only what the world sees as humility: a wishy-washy nobody who lets everyone push him around.

That's it! Your awareness of the tremendous power of my righteousness in you gives you a humble boldness which makes you very useful in my kingdom.

You are humble when you allow me to be bold in you! Your awareness of my life being lived through you makes you bold to speak my word and do my will. Only false humility bows and waits for the "sweet by and by," or prays, "I'm just a poor, weak, and vile sinner. Lord, you do it." Though he appears to be humble, I cannot use him in my kingdom.

Do confess any personal sins and weaknesses as I bring them to mind, but always with faith that I am not only able to forgive and cleanse you from all unrighteousness by my grace, but also to give you my power and righteousness to overcome. Then even those very weaknesses become strengths in my hands. Do bow and wait on me to know my will, but when you discern it, boldly do it with all your heart. It gives me great glory when you are a sharp tool in my hands. Live in the present, not in the past or future. Finally, true humility always bears fruit when the job is done. The proud try to steal some of my glory for themselves, but the humble walk on with scarcely a look back, so that I receive the harvest of glory for what I have accomplished through you.

Good morning, Lord Jesus! I just come to sit at your feet to tell you that I love you! My heart overflows with joy as I think of all you are, and of all you have done, are doing, and will do. You are wonderful beyond words!

Your love? It isn't my own love?

So if someone doesn't know you, how can he really love his wife or children?

I think I know why. Is that because it is the love of God revealed in your goodness to us that calls men to repentance, and you do want all to come to repentance?

What about our expressions of love for one another?

But what if he takes my love, uh, your love through me, and doesn't return it, but rather uses it (and me) for his own selfish purposes?

What really is love? Can you define it in just a few words?

Thank you, my son. I gladly receive my love that you are returning to me. That is why I gave it to you in the first place, you know - so you would be able to experience firsthand the joy that I, as God, have continually.

The only kind of love which you could call your own is that perverted self-love which I call lust or selfishness. But even that is not your own; it originated in satan's rebellion. No person - even the sinner - can experience true love without experiencing some of me, by my grace. I am love, and all true love is a part of me. The outward things you may call love (loving actions, attitudes, and emotions) are in reality expressions of my Spirit within you.

Some don't. Their love is a form of self-love. Their relationships are based on trying to get security, pleasure, and honor for themselves. But don't forget that I shower my grace on all, not just those who know me. I make very sure that everyone at least tastes of my love.

It is indeed! When a person experiences my love, it gives him a hunger for more of me. When you really want more of me, you want to get rid of the barriers between us. This involves repentance - clearing out that which is not of me to make room for more of me.

As I express myself to someone through you, he has an opportunity to receive me in you. If he rejects my love in you, he has rejected me. But if he receives it, he enters into me.

Then he has not received it, but rejected it and substituted his own self-love, lust. All who receive my love, love to give it again, for my love is always giving, living, flowing, and growing. My love cannot feed selfishness.

All of me is love, and love is all of me. Love encompasses every aspect of my nature and every one of my character traits; for example, my judgment reveals my love just as much as my mercy! Everything I do is an expression of my love, and it always results in benefit to all.

How does your love relate to your holiness, justice, and judgment?

Wow! So love hates?! What about fear? Does love also fear? I still sometimes have trouble correlating your love with the "Fear of the Lord" which is the beginning of wisdom, according to Proverbs 9:10.

I still have a tremendous sense of awe in your presence, but you're right; ever since I have begun to experience the power and beauty of your love filling my own life, I'm no longer afraid of you.

To the lowest hell? Could you possibly mean that you love even satan?

Yes Lord, but only in ignorance. I just didn't know how wonderful you are!

I have been taught that you don't violate a person's free will; that if a person chooses to hate you, you eventually give up on him and let him go to hell.

Thank you, Lord. I do come. Please flood me with your love, and let it flow continually through me. My greatest joy is to reflect back your love to you and to your precious ones.

Love is a two-edged sword: discipline for my saints, and punishment for sinners. My love hates anything keeping my beloved from me.

Perfect love is being so full of me that there is no room left for fear. Fear of me is indeed the beginning of wisdom, but the end of wisdom is love. As you become my righteousness, my love so fills you that all fear is cast out.

[Chuckling] I am God! You will always be awed in my presence. No created being can fully comprehend the magnitude of my love. It reaches beyond the farthest star. It descends to the lowest hell. Nothing can escape it, for I am everywhere, and where I am, there is love.

Yes, even satan. Though my plan allows him to be the way he has chosen to be for now, in ages to come he will be reconciled to me and will bow in repentance to acknowledge my lordship. Don't forget that I created him, and gave him the capacity to be what he is now. "Love your enemies" is my command to you because it is my own nature! Though he is now my enemy, yet my love is greater than that. Were you not at one time my enemy?

So also with satan and all my enemies. They do not know what they are doing. Someday all shall know, when my glory is revealed. Then all creation will be reconciled to me and will willingly, joyfully bow in loving worship. Then you will recognize the greatness of my love, when it has drawn every creature into oneness with me. Remember this: satan's way is to force the unwilling into slavery. My way is to love the unwilling into willing oneness.

You were taught wrong. My love never fails; it never gives up. Your teachers have totally underestimated the drawing power of my love. There is no greater force in existence, for my love is me, and all power in heaven and earth is mine. You do not yet understand about my discipline or the punishments of hell. First you must come to me without any reservation and immerse yourself in my love.

Lord Jesus, I've come to you with joy and anticipation to sit at your feet and learn more of your nature. Would you please teach me about your justice this morning?

Yes, Lord. I'd love to hear about your grace.

Well, yes, Lord. Didn't you say that after your return, sinners would be judged and cast into the lake of fire?

Oh yes, Lord. I remember. That's right from II Timothy 1:9 and Ephesians 2:7-8.

Yes, Lord. I'm sorry that I limited you.

Thank you, my Lord. I am deeply grateful. I certainly did not deserve the abundance of blessings you have poured out on me just in bringing me to yourself, not to mention all the blessings since then.

Only a few, Lord? Are there others which you have not chosen, whose hearts are so hard that they cannot ever receive your love?

Thank you, Lord! I will remember. Knowing that, I will also have more compassion.

I also am rejoicing at your coming, my son. May I teach you first of my grace? You will appreciate my justice more when you catch the vision of the magnitude of my grace.

You have been taught, and have even taught others, that "the age of grace is near its end," and that after I return for my bride, there will be no more grace available to sinners.

Your question shows you do not understand the nature of my grace. You are thinking of judgment according to works, but you have forgotten that I saved you and called you into righteousness, not according to your works, but according to my own purpose and grace which I gave you in myself from before time began. You've also forgotten that I saved you so that I might in you display the surpassing riches of my grace throughout ages to come.

Right. Does that give you a clue that my grace is not limited to the created ages?

I, too, am sorry that my people are so quick to limit me to their own understanding. You were created to comprehend only within time, but I dwell in eternity. Grace is a part of my own nature, and is therefore also eternal, for I do not change from age to age. I am infinite; therefore my grace is also infinite. I open your eyes now to see the grace required just for your salvation alone.

Neither does any sinner deserve any good thing from me, yet I continue to pour out blessings from my inexhaustible store. But my grace is far more than just my blessings. For a few in this age, it also opens blind eyes and softens hard hearts to receive my love.

Ever is a long time, my son! Yes, there are others whose hearts I have hardened to fulfill my purposes in this age. From them I have withheld my grace – for now! Do you have no compassion for them? I will prepare you to understand about them, but always remember, my grace is both infinite and eternal.

Good morning, Lord Jesus! May I sit here with you to learn more of your nature?

Yes, it is, and I thank you! Am I ready yet to learn of your justice?

Yes, Lord. You said that your grace is both infinite and eternal, because it is a part of your unchangeable nature. I know that mercy is the same, for you have said in Psalm 136 that your mercy endures forever.

And if a sinner responds to you in time, then the delayed judgment is no longer needed, right?

But if a sinner dies without repenting...

But what about Romans 9:18, where you said that you have mercy on whom you wish, and whom you wish you harden? Doesn't that imply that there are some who are forever hardened?

Uh, you're right, Lord, it doesn't seem very fair. I didn't realize you had kept them from knowing you. But why did you harden them, and how can you now show them mercy?

Wow! Thank you, Lord! That is fantastic! What a plan! I bow in worship to you for your wondrous love to your creation.

Good morning, and welcome. I am always delighted that you wish to learn of my nature, for it is also becoming yours, you know.

Do not be so eager on justice. Even the most mature of my sons sometimes have trouble with that. Let's talk about mercy, instead. Do you remember our talk on grace?

Very good! Both my mercy and my grace are expressions of my love, working together as I draw sinners through repentance into sonship. My mercy tempers my discipline and delays judgment, while my grace pours out blessings and opens eyes and hearts to my goodness, thus enabling sinners to receive my love.

No. My law must always be satisfied. The judgment for sin then falls on me. This is why I died. Mercy does not eliminate my justice, for that too is a part of my nature. But I don't look at time the way you do. Because of the greatness of my love, sinners do respond "in time" from my perspective, even though it may be "too late" from yours.

Does my mercy depend on the beating of a human heart? In this age most sinners are "lost," but what of ages to come? You're still thinking of that traditional end of the "age of grace," but ages to come shall reveal more of my mercy and grace than you can imagine.

Careful! Forever is a long time! Read the rest of Romans 9 before you judge my mercy to be so limited. Why do you think I hated Esau? Why do you think I hardened Pharaoh's heart? Would I be just in denying them my mercy when it was I who kept them from me?

Fair has nothing to do with it. Fair is a worldly term which does not include my justice and which denies my grace and mercy. I hardened Pharaoh to demonstrate my power, and to deliver Israel from Egypt. Later I hardened the Jews to spread my salvation to the Gentiles. In the ages to come, I will display to all of them my infinite mercy and grace through you.

I have come to bow before you, Jesus my Lord, to learn more of your wondrous nature.

Am I finally ready to learn of your justice?

Yes, Lord. I think so.

I think justice is your system of rewards and punishments based on a person's obedience or disobedience to your law, and on good works or evil works.

I love your righteousness, Lord. I also love your commandments, and the revelation of your nature and character through them. But I don't see how they relate to justice.

Ah! I get it! Justice is an eternal part of your nature, like righteousness, grace, and mercy. The rewards and punishments I talked about are merely expressions of your justice during this age of sin, to discipline your sons so that we will grow up into your image. When we are perfectly one with you, the discipline is no longer needed.

So that's why you wanted me to learn of grace and mercy first! Is that why Micah 6:8 says to do justice, but to love mercy?

That doesn't sound like very fair discipline!

Thank you, Lord. That is my goal, too. I praise your holy, righteous name forever!

I rejoice that you have come! What aspect of my nature would you like to explore?

You are still so eager regarding justice? Have you digested our talks on grace and mercy?

Then tell me what you think justice is.

Not quite. Look first at my righteousness. My righteousness is a part of my nature, which is eternal and unchangeable. Every created thing which exists is placed in order, or "judged," by how it compares to my righteousness. In my law, each commandment is an expression of my nature to show you how well you measure up to my righteousness. My justice is like that.

That system of rewards and punishments that you see operating in this world are, like the world itself, purely temporal. When I created the world, I built into it many "natural laws." For example, if you drop something heavy, it falls. If it lands on your toe, it hurts. The pain lasts long enough for you to learn the lesson: "Be careful not to drop heavy things over your toes." This is called discipline. Its goal is not so much to punish you, as to teach you the wisdom of my character – carefulness in this example. But that training is still all temporal.

Exactly! My justice is a high standard. This is why I compared it with righteousness, which is also an absolute, unchangeable standard. But remember, grace and mercy are also part of my eternal nature. Thus justice can be softened, and in fact, I prefer that justice be tempered with mercy when wisdom can be learned easily, for one who is meek and teachable.

Right! My righteousness must always be satisfied, but my justice may treat one person much more severely than others, depending on how he can best learn my wisdom.

My goal is not fairness. My goal is perfection of my precious ones to walk eternally in my righteousness. When you are walking in my righteousness, justice is completely satisfied.

Lord Jesus, I come to sit at your feet, eager to learn more about your justice. I very much appreciated our previous discussion, but it seems like we just scratched the surface. I sense that there is more to your justice than what I learned so far.

You said that justice is a part of your eternal nature, like your righteousness, except justice can be tempered with your mercy and grace. Isn't judgment just a result of your justice confronting our world filled with wickedness?

How can your judgments be just when you send them all across the land? Don't they then fall on the righteous and the wicked alike?

You mentioned mercy and grace mixed with justice. Are they also involved in judgment, even against those whose hearts are hard?

Any, Lord? In the great tribulations that are prophesied to come, won't there be many who will perish under your judgments?

No, I don't fear satan, Lord. Not since I have really come to love you and trust your great power and love. But sometimes I am tempted to fear the judgments that I know are coming.

Thank you, Jesus! Your judgments are good, like everything from your hand. I do abide in faith in you as my refuge and guide. I choose to dwell in that secret place of communion with you, so that I am kept in the shadow of your almighty protection. Though judgments fall all around me, they will not harm me.

I rejoice at your eagerness for my wisdom. Your meditations regarding our lessons on love, grace, mercy, and justice have prepared you well for this lesson. You are right. There is much more to learn about justice. What is the difference between justice and judgment?

Yes. I am the righteous judge of all the earth. When I send my judgments upon a wicked land, it is only by my perfect justice that I do so. The law of sowing and reaping, which I built into the world at creation, still holds.

True. But when judgment falls, my disciples purify themselves and open their hearts to me. They receive it as discipline to learn wisdom. Thus I keep my sons from harm. The wicked harden their hearts against it. This changes the judgment to punishment, even torment. Their own hardness of heart is destroying them.

Oh definitely! If I withdrew my mercy or my grace for even a moment, the earth would be consumed. I always prefer mercy to judgment, and my love is displayed in my unwillingness to allow any to perish in judgment.

Suffer and die, yes. But perish, no. My will is always accomplished. Judgment falls because of sin, to bring sinners to repentance, so they can learn righteousness. I am aware that when I send satan to administer my judgment, his intent is to destroy. Do not fear him. He does not yet understand that he only does my will.

You've only had the eyes to see the outward destruction, suffering, and death. I now give you the vision to see judgment from my point of view. Remember that I dwell in eternity, and that all the combined human suffering since Adam is like the prick of a pin relative to the eternal joy that awaits you. Who will not rejoice and give fervent thanks to me for my judgments, as they realize that the moment of suffering results in an eternity of joy beyond measure? Those who fear judgments must receive what they fear in order to learn faith. Abide in faith; that is your protection.



Dear Lord Jesus, I desperately want to love you with my whole heart, soul, mind, and strength, and to be holy even as you are holy, but I can't! There always seems to be some little thing that turns me aside, and I find myself falling into sin. Please, my Lord and my God, forgive me, cleanse me, and deliver me from the horrible power of sin in my life!

Thank you, Lord Jesus! I willingly submit to your choosing, for I long to be delivered from sin, and I know that only you can do it.

Yes, Lord. I understand about temptations. They do usually turn me right to you, uh... if I recognize them as temptations in time. But what about these old habits and conditionings from the past which I don't even recognize as sins?

I don't understand, Lord. Isn't sin always sin, regardless of whether or not it results in my repentance and turning back to you?

Yes, Lord. He wanted to be as God, knowing good and evil for himself. So he ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. That was indeed an act of his willful self, since it was in direct opposition to your specific command.

My heart rejoices even as yours despairs, my son! I have brought you to the end of yourself that you would cry out to me for deliverance. I am the Savior! I do hear you, and forgive your sins, and I also save you from that root of sin in your life, as my name promises. Let me teach you about sin, for I have chosen to deliver you from all sin, that you may walk with me in my kingdom forever!

First, you must get rid of that false notion that temptations are sins. I often allow temptation to turn aside your focus for a short time, for the testing of your faith. If your first response is to indulge your fleshly appetites or to resist with your own human wisdom and strength, then you have failed the test and fallen into sin. I will then lead you to repent and learn my wisdom, after which I will test you again. But if your first response is to look to me for wisdom and assistance, you have not sinned, for my test purifies my faith in your heart.

Forget them. They are not sins to you until I reveal to your heart that they are an offense to me. I do not demand instant maturity of my sons, but I give them time to grow. Learn to love my law, for through it I reveal areas where you still need to grow and draw closer to me. Nothing is a sin if, as soon as you see it as sin, you turn from it and draw closer to me.

You are thinking of outward actions as sins, but I judge according to the heart. The only real sin is the heart opposed to me, which is rebellion or idolatry. The arrogant self who lives by his human mind, feelings, and desires of the flesh, is living in sin. He has neither seen me nor known me. Remember Adam?

Correct. And all his descendants died, for in him have all sinned. But you are born of me, and you cannot sin, for my grace keeps your heart always turned towards me. I use your failures only as tools to help you grow in every aspect of my character. Do not call it sin when I have allowed it in your life for my purposes, for I do not cause anyone to sin!

Wow, Lord! I think I just heard you say that I cannot sin! How can that be? Does that mean that I should stop repenting?

Yes Lord! I certainly have. But still, I feel that I have fallen so far short of your glory, and have failed so miserably in your plans and purposes for me.

You make it sound like I dishonor you every time I confess my sins!

I'm sorry, Lord! Holy Spirit, please remind me to watch my tongue! How should I confess?

Yes Lord! What a wonderful confession! You are my savior from sin. I do now confess that the perfect sacrifice of your blood is sufficient for me, and that I am set forever free from the power of sin. I reckon my old sin nature dead and buried with you at Golgotha. Praise God that I am free from it! I now confess that I am a bondsman to your righteousness. I accept your free gift of eternal life in your presence! You have set me free for you to develop your nature and character in me, that you may shine with your glory through me. From this day on it is only you living in and through me for your purposes and pleasure! Hallelujah!

Yes indeed, stop repenting for sin, for there is no rebellion or idolatry in your heart! You know that if I should find some there, you already gave me permission to get rid of it.

Then repent of falling short of my glory, and of weakness and failing in my plans for you. But repent with faith, for in truth it is only I in you that achieves my glory, and only I in you that fulfills my plans and purposes. So do not bemoan your falling short, when it is I who has brought you thus far, and I am responsible for completing all that I have promised. My strength is made perfect in your weakness; my righteousness in you converts your failures and mistakes into perfection. My body is free from sin, and you are a member of my body.

Indeed you do dishonor me, when you call sin that which I have allowed in you for your good. The power of the tongue is beyond your comprehension. Confessing that you are still a sinner after I saved you from sin is confessing satan's lordship over you and your bondage to his domain of evil. Do not give him power by idle confessions of faith in his power!

First confess that my perfect and complete atonement for sin, through my blood shed for you, has saved you from all the power of sin. Reckon that old sin nature dead and buried with me at Golgotha, and confess with your heart and lips that it is dead and buried, and that you are slave to it no more. Then confess the mighty power of my righteousness in you, bringing you into my very presence with great joy, setting you free to develop and grow into all the perfection of my nature and character, and allowing my glory to shine through you to all my creation. You bear my name, my son! Confess with your heart and lips that only my eternal life lives in you, and through you I will bring great honor and glory to my name!

I rejoice with you that you have received my salvation: my victory over sin and my power to walk in my righteousness. Trust me, my son, and I will never allow you to fall into sin.

Lord Jesus. May I come to sit at your feet and learn from you about my health? My throat is sore and my head aches. When I feel like this, I don't feel very effective for your kingdom.

Does that mean you want me to always be healthy?

Thank you, Lord, for the sore throat and the headache! I do want to learn your wisdom, not just to be delivered from the suffering, but also because I dearly love your wisdom.

One perfect diet for everyone? I thought each individual problem or circumstance required a different diet.

Yes, Lord! You have my full attention!

But Lord, what about the high protein foods: the meat, fish, milk, cheese, and eggs? Didn't you allow the Israelites to eat the clean meats, as long as they eliminated the fat and blood?

What about sweetenings such as sugar, honey, and concentrated fruit sweeteners? I remember you called the Promised Land a "land flowing with milk and honey"!

Welcome, my son! I am especially glad that you come to me when you don't feel effective for my kingdom, for it is my desire that you always radiate the good health of my kingdom.

Yes, I do! But health is possible only through obedience to my health principles! Disease results from violating my principles, and is meant to encourage you to learn my wisdom.

Good. Here is wisdom! I have a perfect diet for man, as well as for each of my creatures. Those that do not eat my perfect diet, weaken, suffer, and die at an early age; that is disease. If you hear me, and are careful to do all that I say, I will keep you from all disease.

But I am lord of the differences just as I am of the circumstances. Therefore my perfect diet for mankind makes provision for all. Ready?

Nutrition is essential for life. In your spirit, feed continually on my living word; all else is poison. For your body, feed two or three times daily (except for your weekly time of fasting) on fruits, grains, and seeds, alternated with meals of vegetables, herbs, grains, and nuts. Minimize cooking; fresh, raw, simple meals are best! Better yet, learn to sprout the grains and seeds, as the young sprouts are the most nutritious. If a mother obeys me on this, her infant will flourish on only mother's milk, which is my perfect diet for babies.

I allowed clean animals to be killed and eaten during the age of sin, to illustrate the tragedy of futility to which I subjected my creation. In my kingdom it is not so, for animals are your friends, obedient to my authority in you. Animal products such as milk, cheese, and eggs will not harm a healthy person if used moderately, but are not part of my perfect diet. Eat a few nuts now and then, and perhaps some fish; you will get plenty of protein!

Fruit sweeteners are a poor but acceptable substitute for fresh fruit; honey is better, but only in moderation. Refined sugar is poison.

Refined sugar is poison?

Thank you, Lord; I heed your warning. What about spices, condiments, and commercially processed foods? And should I add vitamin and mineral supplements to my diet?

Thank you, Lord! Is that about it?

That sounds good! So to start my day, I wake up with my stretching and bouncing exercises, and with several glasses of warm water to flush out my digestive system. Then after a half hour or so of feasting on your living word and enjoying communion with you, I'll be ready for breakfast.

I gladly receive your instruction, Oh my Lord Jesus Christ! Thank you for your Holy Spirit in me, giving me the will and the power to do all that you have shown me. I know that my sinful appetites are dead and buried with you – now all my remaining appetites I joyfully commit to your lordship. I notice that your perfect diet spells out **NEW START!** I joyfully start anew, and from this day forth I walk with you in your kingdom and in your wisdom of perfect health.

Yes. It is a toxic, addictive drug, not a food.

Natural salts and herbal spices may be good, but minimize refined products and processed foods. Food supplements may be good for now, especially to recover from disease; I allow you to continue taking them for a time until my earth is thoroughly cleansed and the land is healed, so that it brings forth once again from its full strength. For example, vitamin C and calcium-magnesium supplements may be needed daily. But supplements can be avoided by the regular addition of fresh vegetable juice (like carrot and celery) to the diet.

Nutrition is but one part of my perfect diet. Exercise is just as important! Daily bouncing, stretching, fast walking, and deep breathing are needed to maintain your physical health, as is hard physical work or vigorous aerobic exercises which increase your heart rate and respiration for at least 15 minutes 2 or 3 times a week. Don't forget to drink plenty of pure Water in between meals. Distilled, de-ionized, or well water at about 90 to 110° F is best; chemically treated water is not pure, and ice cold or boiling water is a shock to the system.

Sunshine is also important. Get out in it daily when I give you opportunity. It will not hurt your skin if you eat no animal fats. But use Temperance in this and all things; abstain from evil and be moderate on what is good. Air is essential. Each cell in your body must have a constant supply of oxygen to survive. Especially at night, even in winter, keep your window open a crack for my fresh pure air! Rest is essential, too. Sleep refreshes the body, the weekly Sabbath rest renews the body, soul, and spirit, and your times of rest in fasting and special communion with me restores your whole being into what I created you to be! Trust only me. Obey me in all things. I gave you a physical picture of a spiritual principle. My perfect diet is my lordship, my direction and control, over your spiritual, emotional, and physical appetites, that we may walk in my kingdom together, free from all disease.

Oh, Lord Jesus, I come into your presence, weary from a heavy load of responsibilities and concerns. I long to be rid of this physical body, so that I may dwell forever with you in your wonderful heavens.

Yes, Lord! I used to feel that my physical body was just for my temporary training, testing, and preparation to make me fit for heaven. Do you have other purposes for it here on earth?

You want a physical body? And here I was wanting to get rid of it!

Lord, how can you enjoy my physical body?

But I thought that was just to be a spiritual “wedding,” to take place only when we got to heaven. What does that have to do with the physical body?

Forever, Lord? I thought this physical body was to pass away!

Yes, my son, come and rest all your earthly cares and burdens here with me, for I have borne them all, and I understand. Allow me now to open the eyes of your heart to the real purposes for which I have created your body.

Your goal is not just heaven; it is oneness with me! I have many purposes for you here on earth, but the highest is that your soul may be filled with my spirit, so that my life may live in your physical body. Look at the physical realm from my point of view; my deepest desire is to have a body in which to live.

I eagerly welcome you into my presence, whenever you are willing to come. In truth you are my temple, my dwelling place, and my greatest joy is to fill my temple with my glory. You only wanted to be rid of it because you have spent so much time apart from me. If you will dwell continually with me and allow my life to fill you totally, I will heal, strengthen, cleanse, and perfect your physical body. Then you will begin to enjoy it as much as I do!

Like a fish enjoys the water, or a bird enjoys the air! You are for me, and I am for you, for I created you to fit me perfectly. Just as the husband and the wife are one flesh, perfectly suitable for each other, so are we, for that is my design. You have no idea how I long for my wedding day with you, my bride!

You are in heaven if you are in my presence. Our wedding is in spirit, for I am spirit, but it is also in the physical realm, for your body is physical. Our wedding is a marriage of spirit with physical, so that I forever have a perfect physical body through which to live my life.

Forever means for all time; it does not imply eternity. Your physical body, as well as all creation, will change as you enter my kingdom age. You will experience no sorrow, aging, or suffering. Many things will change, including undue burdens to care for and provide for the physical needs of the body. Yes, throughout all the ages I shall delight in my physical body!

When will the physical body pass away?

When my body is fully mature in all of my nature and character, wisdom and ways, then you will have fully experienced all that there is to experience (that is, all of me). Then time itself will draw to a close, for you will have entered fully into my eternity. Then all things physical will have served their purpose, and be no longer needed. But do not be concerned of that, for it is yet sweet ages of ages away.

You speak of these ages as if they are something that you will enjoy. Can you, a dweller in eternity, enjoy time and the physical realm?

Yes, I sure do! I enjoy guiding the maturing process of all my creatures, especially my sons. I enjoy working out my Plan of the Ages down to the tiniest detail, even in and through those whose intent it is to thwart my plan. But best of all, I enjoy living my life in and through my own precious sons; you, my firstfruits of this age, out of my vast harvest that I have reserved for myself during ages to come.

Could you describe a little of how you enjoy living in your sons?

I enjoy tasting the good healthy foods which you eat, for I have no body to feed other than yours. I enjoy seeing my beauty in creation through your eyes. I enjoy a good night's rest in you as you accept my gift of sleep, for as spirit I cannot sleep. I enjoy a loving touch, a hug, a kiss, a caring embrace, and the joyful physical union of husband and wife, for as spirit I cannot touch or feel as you. I enjoy the encouraging communications between my saints, for that is my mind maturing in you.

But Lord Jesus, what about the physical body you took on when you came to earth to be born of Mary in Bethlehem?

I am far bigger than that! Do you really think that one member could contain all of me? My first earthly body was assigned the mission to defeat evil and death, and redeem my precious ones. I had little time then to enjoy the body I was creating for myself. But now my sacrifice has borne fruit and my body has grown from one member to many, so I can begin to really enjoy this life that I have chosen to live in and through you. Just think of my first physical body as "conception" – the first living cell of my perfect body. Now, my body has come to "birth" and is beginning to grow and mature. In the ages to come, I rule over all creation through my physical body until all things are subjected unto me, so that I am all in all.

Praise you, Oh my Lord Jesus Christ! How awesome to consider that I am a member of your perfect body, and that you enjoy your life in me! Thank you for this lesson, Lord! I will be much more careful to keep this temple holy, now that I know how much you enjoy dwelling here in me and living through me. Truly, it is my joy and delight that you take delight in me, for now I see that this is why I was created. Here I am, Lord; I offer myself as a living sacrifice – I gladly sacrifice the old selfish life, for your life to be *all in me*.

Good morning my Lord Jesus! What a joy it is to come into your presence and learn from you! I've been impressed recently by your Spirit from Psalm 119 about loving your law. Will you please teach me how to do that?

How is your nature and character revealed in your law?

Well, I think I know what your law is, Lord. Isn't it the Ten Commandments, summarized by the two great commandments to "Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, soul, strength, and mind, and love thy neighbor as thyself"?

I humbly bow in worship, my Lord. I limited you by my own limited understanding. Truly you are a much bigger God than I can ever comprehend. Please, expand my heart and my vision so I can love you in your law.

That's easy. I know you are love; I reflect your nature back to you by loving you with my whole being, and I display your character to others by loving them as much as myself.

Wow! No, I hadn't noticed! So that is how your nature and character are revealed within your law! Now I understand why you were willing to bear my sin, and suffer and die for me! What fantastic love you are! Oh, fill me with your love; fill me with all of yourself!

Yes, gladly, my son. And welcome into my presence! King David loved my law because he loved me. In my law, he recognized my nature and character, and he expressed his love for me through his love for my law. David also worshipped me when he obeyed my law from his heart. Thus he was a man after my own heart, and so are you as you do the same.

Perhaps you first should ask the question, "What is my law?"

That's a good start, but my law is much bigger than that. What about the laws which change from age to age: my dietary, ceremonial, and civil laws?. What about my unchanging laws, my natural law upon which I founded the universe, my spiritual law which governs my heavens, and my law of physical-to-spiritual relationships? What about my scriptures (some of which are yet to be written), and my living word, the revelation of my Spirit to your heart? These aspects of my law all reveal my nature and character. I am the God of law and order throughout every realm of my universe.

Do not be anxious, for I am doing that now and will continue for much time to come. Let's start with my moral law, summarized as you said by my two greatest commandments. What do you think they reveal about me?

Right. Did you notice in that statement of yours that my love is the sum total of every aspect of my whole being, and that I love you even as much as I love myself?

You are being filled! Your love of my law is your love of me, for my law is my expression of myself to you. Many who do not know me are under forced obligation to obey my law, but they cannot, for they do not see me in it; therefore they can only be slaves to sin and death until I choose to set them free. But I reveal myself to you within my law, and fill you with my love. My love gives you power to obey perfectly from your heart everything I set before you, and thus my law is fulfilled in you.

Your law fulfilled in me? Wow! I've even had trouble keeping the Ten Commandments.

But Lord, what about when I was angry with my brother recently? Isn't that breaking your commandment to not murder, as you said in Matthew 5:21 and 22?

Thank you my Lord and my God! I do reckon my past dead and buried with you at Golgotha – forgiven and forgotten. You are indeed my life, from this moment on. I delight in seeing your righteousness work through even this humble vessel. I sense that that is the Gospel of the Kingdom in a nutshell.

That you are the only real God, and that you are our loving heavenly Father. You want to be close to us, and to guide and protect us from being misled by the claims of false gods.

I may not make idols for myself, nor worship them, for you are a jealous God, allowing no rivals to your lordship anywhere in my life. Uh... Is that really the second one, or is it part of the first? Doesn't that have about the same meaning as the first commandment?

Thank you for keeping my affections fixed on you, that I not be led astray by placing any value at all upon the things of this physical life, or even seeking for security from them.

Thank you, Lord. I dare not be careless about what you have so carefully provided. I do appreciate your character of carefulness!

In yourself you cannot keep them. But I in you keep them perfectly, now and always.

You must have repented and been forgiven, for I remember no such incident. I do not live in the past, my son. Neither should you. Don't make provision for the flesh by looking to the past as your standard. I am your life! Simply reckon the past dead, buried with me. Live my perfect righteous life moment by moment.

No, but it is entering into my kingdom, in a nutshell. [Laughing] Frankly, this Gospel of the Kingdom is too big to fit into a nutshell! Let's look now into my Ten Commandments, and how they reveal my nature and character. What does the **first** one, "You shall have no other gods before me," reveal about me?

Very good. It also demonstrates my power and authority over all false gods, as I keep this commandment in you, my precious son. What about the **second** commandment?

Not at all. Those who combine the first two commandments are doing me great injustice. There are false gods, though I have defeated them. But idols are pure deception; physical things which the false gods use to manipulate and tempt those who walk by sight and not by faith. I am Spirit. You who walk by faith in me live by the spirit, and do not cast your worship or adoration down into the fleshly realm. This second commandment differentiates between the sinner and the saint. My saints are one with me in vision and purpose; sinners still place part of their affections on earthly things.

Careful, my son! It is good that you find your security only in me. But I do value physical things, as they are of use to me in my kingdom to be a blessing to my precious ones. You are a good steward of my physical things when my values become your values.

When my carefulness is seen in each thing I have created, sinners make idols, but my saints recognize my glory and worship me.



What about the **third** commandment, Lord?  
“Don’t use your name irreverently or vainly.”  
What does that reveal about your nature and  
character?

Thank you, my Lord. I do open up my heart to  
learn of you through your many names...  
What about your **fourth** commandment? How  
does “Remember the Sabbath day to keep it  
holy” reveal your nature and character?

Does this have anything to do with the passage  
in Hebrews 4 which says, “...there remains  
therefore a Sabbath Rest for the people of  
God.”? I always thought that referred to the  
future Millennium. Is that coming soon?

That is a lot to digest, Lord! But I receive it  
gladly and trust that you will bring it to pass  
through my life in you...  
How about the **fifth** commandment, which is  
to “Honor my father and mother”?

Thank you, Lord, for your precious gift of  
earthly parents, to teach me how to relate to  
you. As I trust you in this, thank you for being  
faithful to not let them lead me astray.

All life, Lord? I thought that just talked about  
human life. Some translations render this,  
“You shall not murder.”

I have many names. As you use each one, I  
establish my relationship to you based on your  
understanding and use of that special name.  
Those who use my names lightly cannot have  
anything but superficial relationships with me.  
As you learn of me through my names, you  
become like me, for you also bear my name.

I worked diligently for six days, and rested the  
seventh. I therefore set up the seventh day as a  
perpetual memorial of my completed works.  
You have worked for six thousand years, and it  
has been but vanity and futility. Remember  
now my Sabbath! Turn aside from your own  
pleasure and laziness. Be diligent to do my  
pleasure on my holy day. Thus I restore the  
communion I had with Adam before the Fall!

Yes, it is time for you to enter my Sabbath Rest  
– to rule for a thousand years with me in my  
kingdom. You enter my kingdom through my  
Sabbaths! When you recognize my sovereignty  
in my works completed during the six days of  
creation, you accept my authority as king and  
find rest in doing only my completed works.

I am Father; I am Mother. Your relationship to  
me, and the blessings you receive from that  
relationship, depend partly on how you relate  
to your earthly father and mother. I gave you  
parents in place of me when you were young.  
They should point you to me. Honor me  
through them and I reward you with long life  
and prosperity, for I lead you, give you  
wisdom, and bless you even through them.

I am glad you appreciate my faithfulness. The  
**sixth** commandment is “You shall not kill.”  
When you recognize me as the source of all  
life, you joyfully participate with me in setting  
all my creation free from the bondage of sin  
and the futility of suffering and death.

Human life is most precious, but animals and  
birds were created to be your friends. Plant life  
was created for food. Insect and germ life was  
created to assist healthy life and to get rid of  
all else. Respect my purposes in all life.

Thank you, Lord. I will respect all forms of life much more, now that I know why you created them. I reverence you as the author of life as I perceive your glory within each living thing... Are we ready for the **seventh** commandment, which prohibits adultery? Does "adultery" here also include pre-marital sex and other forms of sexual immorality and perversions?

Yes, my Lord! I too long for you, that I may see you face to face even with my physical eyes, and ever be with you in your glory!

Thank you for helping me bear responsibility properly. Please grant me your wisdom in my stewardship of the property you assign me... The **ninth** commandment relates to lying, especially when it is against my neighbor.

Wow! Thank you, Lord! I had no idea that lying was such an abomination to you! Holy Spirit, please guard my tongue so that no lie ever slips out of this mouth! Also, please guard my mind so that I am never guilty of believing or living a lie.

Yes Lord, in knowing you I am content. I feel full, like I've had a feast of learning about you through your law! And this is just a summary of your moral law! How much more is in your dietary, civil, ceremonial, natural, psychic, and spiritual laws? I have much yet to learn.

Yes indeed! I will not share you with other lovers! I made you for me. I also am for you. I created the bonds between a husband and his wife to show you how closely I bond with you, my precious one, in this our ever deepening love relationship. I long for the consummation of our oneness, that I may enjoy you, and you may enjoy me, throughout the ages of ages.

The **eighth** commandment prohibits stealing. But deeper than that, it reveals my absolute ownership of all things, and encourages you to wise stewardship of that which I entrust to you. You are not tempted to take that which I have entrusted to others when you recognize the responsibility I require of my stewards!

Lying is always against your neighbor, for any lie is against me and all my precious ones. I am truth, my son. My word is truth. My law is truth. My nature and character are truth. I hate lies! No liar has any part in me. You, my son, are an expression of my truth to my world. I allow no lies to mar the display of my glory to my creation! The devil has done his best to bring lies and perversion of all kinds into my world, but he has failed and his perversions are now wearing thin. Now is time for my sons to stand boldly in my truth, that all creation may see the lie exposed for what it is.

I will, my son, for it is my joy and delight to bring forth my truth through you. "You shall not covet" is the **tenth** commandment. Sinners frantically seek physical things to give them comfort, security, happiness, never realizing that only I can fill that void. You, my saints, don't covet because you really trust me! You know that I meet your needs, satisfy your longings, and fill your lives with happiness and joy. You are perfectly content in all things.

All of my principles for life, health, peace, joy, and relationships are contained within my law. Trust me, love me, and obey me carefully in all that I show you in my law, and together we will ride upon the glorious heights of blessings as I reveal my wisdom.

Oh my Lord Jesus Christ, I have come into your presence to bow and humble myself, that I may be your bondservant now and always. I throw myself at your feet and ask you how I may serve you. My debt of gratitude and love is greater than I can ever pay.

Thank you, Lord! How awesome to be called your son! Should I call you Father?

Please teach me about your names, that I may better understand our relationship. I usually pray to you as Father, call you Lord during my prayer, and then close, "...in the name of Jesus," but I've never really understood why.

Truly, you are the Lord Jesus Christ! How lovely is that name! Thank you for so greatly deepening our relationship by revealing more of the meaning behind your name. I begin to see why your name, "The Lord Jesus Christ," (or, in Hebrew, "Adonai, Yashua haMashiach") is the name above all names, highly exalted, the name at which every knee bows! I honor and worship your holy, wonderful, precious name as through it I catch a fresh vision of the awesome majesty of your power and wisdom, the glorious beauty and perfection of your nature and character, and the all-embracing immensity of your infinite goodness and love for your creation, all revealed within that one all-inclusive name: "The Lord Jesus Christ."

As you throw yourself down, I lift you up, my son! Servant you are, for all things serve me. But we have a deeper relationship than that, for the servant does not know what his master does! Now I call you my son, for I teach you as a father. Also, I am not ashamed to call you my brother, son of our Father. In my kingdom our oneness exceeds that of any earthly brother!

You may if you wish, for one of my names is **Eternal Father**. For many activities (such as intercessory prayer) that is appropriate. My many names are to help you relate to various aspects of my nature and character. Names are very important, for each name you use for me determines our relationship at the time.

I am **the Lord**. I am the Eternal Father, as well as the Creator, Master, and Sustainer of all my creation. There is only one God, and I am one. All flows from me and returns to me. I am **The Lord**, Lord of lords, King of kings. My power and majesty are revealed in my name **Lord**, and as you use that name relate to me in meekness, humility, fear, reverence, awe, teachableness, and worship, as my son.

I am **Jesus**. I am the Savior, the son of man, God with man, God become man. I broke down the wall of separation between God and man and brought peace, delivering you from the power of sin to restore you into intimate fellowship with myself. My great love, mercy, grace, and righteousness are revealed in my name Jesus; as you use that name relate to me in love, thankfulness, and joy as my brother.

I am **Christ**. I am the Messiah, who is and is to come, in whom is fulfilled all prophecy and all promises. I am the servant; in you I serve my brothers. I am your strength, your health, your encouragement, for I am the Holy Spirit, the healer, the comforter. I am your guide, your wisdom, your truth; I guide you into all truth. When you use my name Christ, relate to me as "I Am," the ever-present provider, dwelling within you and shining with the glory of my nature and character in loving service to all creation through you. **I Am** your love, your joy, your peace, your life, your all in all.

My beloved Lord Jesus Christ, my heart is bursting and overflowing with joy as I come into your presence! What pure delight fills my soul as I bow before you to learn of you!

Yes, my Lord. I was hoping you would!

I think so, Lord. Happiness on earth is the state of being content with what I have and where I am, and not being anxious about the future. Pleasure is the feeling I receive when I become aware that I am happy, especially as it is focused on one thing in particular that I'm doing or that I am or have.

Well, I've always assumed that joy is an overabundance of happiness and pleasure, with perhaps some peace and love and beauty and grace, all rolled into one.

But do you allow unbelievers to taste of your joy at times to lead them to repentance, like you do with your goodness and love?

So happiness and pleasure can never be perfect or complete without your joy?

I thank and praise you, Oh Lord Jesus Christ my Creator, my joy and delight! I do receive your gift of fullness of joy, together with your promise that I will never be empty again! Teach me ways to express your joy to others, that they too may accept their created purpose and receive their fulfillment in you!

[Laughing] My heart is also filled with joy, joy unbounded in the relationship growing between us, for your joy is but a reflection of my own. May I teach you about my joy?

Let's compare it with happiness and pleasure. They are easy to understand, for both have human equivalents. Can you explain them?

Very good! It pleases me that you avoided the worldly perversions which some attach to those words. Notice that your mind is being cleansed to think purely, even when using words such as 'pleasure', which the world perverted and claimed for its own. Now, can you tell me where joy fits into all this?

Close. But there is a difference. There is no human equivalent of joy, for it is mine and mine alone. The most happy person, with the greatest of this world's pleasures, cannot taste my joy without tasting of me, for just as I am love, and I am peace, so also I am joy.

Seldom, my son. The sinner can experience happiness and pleasure by my grace, but deep down there is always that nagging emptiness which makes it all incomplete and unfulfilling until it becomes completed with my joy. I usually reserve their first taste of my joy, true joy, for that moment when they open up their hearts to receive my love. What joy we and all the angels share then! My love, goodness, and mercy leads the sinner to repentance, but my joy draws the believer into my presence as his continual dwelling place.

That is true. You know that indulgently racing after the world's empty pleasures can never bring true fulfillment. Hear carefully now my definition of joy. Joy is my gift to your heart, enabling you to adequately respond to me as I reveal to you the purposes for which I created you, and as I grant you the power to begin accomplishing those purposes. Thus my joy has fulfillment built into it. It can never be empty, but always overflowing. Here, take my gift of joy, and never be empty again!

Jesus my Lord, you've blessed me so much, you've given me so much, done so much for me, proved yourself over and over in my life, and you know that I trust you and love you, and that I really do believe you. I almost feel silly asking this question, but, do you mind?

Well, that's just it, Lord! What is faith? Do I have it, or do I just think I have it? And if I really have true faith, why am I sometimes still tempted to doubt, or fear, or be anxious?

Yes, thank you, I am reminded of the lesson on sin. But what does fearing you have to do with faith, and what did you mean when you said you answer according to *my* faith, and yet you will teach me to know *your* faith?

Yes, Lord Jesus! I have, I do! With every fibre of my being I have dedicated my will to total submission to you. I command my self-nature to lie buried with you at Golgotha. I demand all that is left of me to submit to your lordship that I may learn of you and do your will.

It sounds like my faith is not worth much until it is united with yours.

Wow! So that must be the peaceable fruit of righteousness, born by the marriage of our faith-dedication to your faith-action.

Ask, my son. I know the deep troublings and wrestlings within your heart better than you! It honors me that you should open your heart to me and receive the ministry of my peace. I only require that you ask in faith, nothing doubting; for I answer according to your faith.

Remember the lesson on sin? Temptations are not sin; they are tests to strengthen your faith. Fear them not, but rather fear only me and I will teach you to know my faith.

Review again the lesson on sin! You are still regarding sin as the opposite of righteousness, but it is not. Sin is the opposite of faith! Sin results in sins, just as faith results in righteous deeds. Sin is self-rule in haughty rebellion against me, which is idolatry. Your faith is willfully putting that proud self-nature to death and in humble fear submitting yourself to my lordship learn of me and to do my will.

Good! That is your only correct response to the awakening call of my spirit of faith. My response to that choice of your will is to give you my gift of faith, which is very different from your faith. Human faith is often a blind choice, a decision or set of the will to submit to someone whom you cannot see, hear, taste, smell, or touch. But my gift of faith provides substance to that blind choice, and enables you to actually do acts of righteousness.

Nor is mine worth much to you until united with yours. This is a relationship, my son! I can work mighty miracles in a person's life to give him faith, but until he takes that step of simple human faith to set his will to mine it will avail nothing. Much of what I do on the earth is done to kindle a spark of faith in my precious ones! I long to find even the tiniest seed of faith, so that I may nurture it, multiply it, and combine it with my gift of faith. Then it can bring forth fruit on the earth!

Yes indeed! And this combined faith is the most powerful force on earth, for in our faith relationship nothing can be denied.

Is that why you said that even faith as small as a mustard seed will move mountains?

Well, Lord, I think I do understand, because I've been there! I used to think that faith was pushing away all my doubts and forcing myself to believe. It never occurred to me that faith was simply setting my will to submit to your lordship and let my self-nature die!

What happens to them, my Lord? They try so hard! They wrestle with their doubts and fears, and agonize over their unbelief! They pray and struggle to believe, and wonder why there is no spiritual power in their lives. Why? What can you do for them? Can't you reach down and take them as far as they've come and give them your gift of faith?

Oh, my Lord Jesus Christ! I must admit I am appalled, horrified! All of a sudden I caught a glimpse of what the occult is: it is those who have a spiritual gift of faith from satan, united with their dedication to the self-nature! It does result in spiritual power, but it is evil power directed against your kingdom. Your own law, working against you...

You don't sound very horrified, Lord! Isn't that just terrible the way people unwittingly join the occult by failing to deny self in their quest for faith...

Yes, Lord! Your gift of faith is my way of life. I treasure it in my heart. Thank you for planting it there – for enabling me to do your will, for such is my joy and delight.

When my dedication to do your will (whether I understand it or not) unites with your authority, guidance, wisdom, and power to do your will, I am walking by faith. Isn't that it?

Yes, but be careful! Many have spent a lot of time and effort working up a counterfeit faith, and quoting that verse to try to twist my arm to accomplish their own will. Tell me if you understand: what do they think faith is?

Now understand, my son, why that counterfeit faith cannot work. You could spend a lifetime pushing away the doubts and forcing yourself to "believe," and all you would end up with is a lifetime of "good" works, worth no more than filthy rags to me. Sadly, many are there.

No, my son. I can do nothing for them. Until I see that spark of real faith, that tiniest seed of dedication to my lordship, that slightest desire to turn away from the self-nature and submit to my will, I cannot give them my gift of faith. To do so would empower their self-nature to rise up a spiritual force against my kingdom. My law works, even when used against me.

That is correct; that is why I withhold my gift of faith until I see a dedication to my will. I would rather see my precious one spend his life wrestling with doubt and unbelief and die in spiritual poverty, yet humble and repentant, than have him lift himself up in the pride of a counterfeit faith to a life of spiritual power in active opposition to my will.

No, my son. I am not a man, that I should be troubled by them. At the right time they will learn the error of their ways. But instead, I delight in those few who do reach up with the simple faith of self-denial to accept my gift of faith as their way of life. They may not seem great in the world's eyes, but they are to me, and they do mighty exploits for my kingdom!

You're welcome, my son. Now, try to explain back to me how my gift of faith really works. I have given you clues. Can you put it together?

Close, but more than that. You receive my gift of faith when I open up your heart to sense the guidance of my Holy Spirit. Only in union with me are you empowered to do my will.

Oh, my Lord Jesus, I have come to throw myself at your feet and cry before you. My body aches and throbs with sickness. Please teach me why you allow suffering.

I love to come to you, Lord, for I know that you are my strength and my healer. I thank you for my suffering, Lord, for I know that you are teaching me your wisdom through it. But my pain reminds me of many millions of innocent people, even children and babies, who live and die in constant pain and sorrow, who have never heard of you, and thus have no one to turn to in their suffering.

But Lord, that doesn't sound fair! If they are really innocent because they are free only to obey their sin nature, why must they suffer so? Can you quicken all of them to receive your grace, to deliver them from their misery?

No, my Lord. You are right. Thank you for being willing to suffer and die, so that I may be redeemed from the power of sin and brought into your kingdom of righteousness.

I'm very sorry that I judged you unfair, Lord. I was not aware that you identified so closely with us in our sufferings! But all the more, why have you continued to allow mankind's bondage to our inherited sin nature, and the suffering and death that results?

Thank you, Lord, for your infinite love and wondrous sovereignty over all your creation! Thank you for motivation through suffering, that we may learn your wisdom, share your nature, and walk with you into the freedom from suffering accompanying your perfection. I am excited to hear you say "until now"! I sense your eagerness to cast death and hell into the lake of fire and put a final end to pain. So for the joy you've set before me I willingly submit to the discipline of suffering.

My beloved child, I am glad that you have come! Some harden their hearts against me in their troubles, but I delight in the meek, who come to learn of me through their suffering.

Your question reveals an ignorance of the meaning of innocence. All are guilty before the law, for all sinned in Adam and are born in rebellion against me. Adam's sons have all inherited his sin nature, thus all instinctively live to serve self from the moment they are conceived. Yet all are innocent, for they have no choice but to act according to their nature. They are completely dead to my righteous ways, and cannot understand or accept anything from me unless I change their nature.

"Fair" is my enemy! It judges me according to human standards and with limited human understanding. Tell me, is it fair that I, who never had a sin nature and never yielded to temptation, should suffer more than they all?

You speak of suffering past. Do you know the depth of suffering I bear daily with each of my precious ones? All humanity is in my heart. I experience each happiness or sorrow, each pleasure or pain, and each agony of soul.

Before Adam, sin existed, but my creation did not know that its fruit is suffering and death. I gave satan my permission to tempt Adam, I allowed Adam's first sin, I subjected creation to futility, and I allowed sin, suffering, and death to continue until now for three reasons. First, so that all creation would witness the awfulness of sin as it matures and bears its fruit of suffering and death to us all – in direct comparison to the goodness of my ways – so that none of my creatures throughout all the ages of time would ever again be tempted to turn from the righteousness of my ways. Second, to demonstrate my infinite love by giving of myself to fulfill the law's demands and redeem all my creation back unto myself. And third, to purify an eternal body for myself, made of many members unified and matured through suffering into my nature.

Oh my Father, I come gratefully but sadly into your presence. I have been bowed down with cares for the lost and dying in this present world. So many multitudes who don't know you or who have hardened their hearts against you, and who are heading for eternal torment and separation from you.

Yes, Lord. But then, what happens to those who live a life of sin and who despise your salvation? Or worse yet, what about those who live their entire lives in sin and have never even heard the gospel, or who die in infancy?

I'm sure you do find a way to reach the infant or the one who never heard the gospel, but...

I do remember you saying that you love even your enemies, such as satan and those who follow him. But what about those passages like Revelation 14:11 which say that they will be tormented day and night forever and ever?

How should those passages be translated? Should there be no fear of punishment? I remember reading about revivals in the camp meetings in early America, where multitudes came into your kingdom by fear of hell. Some preachers in those days didn't preach much but hellfire and damnation! Were they wrong? And how else would all those people have been reached for your kingdom?

Yes, my Lord Jesus Christ! I thank you for your perfect justice and holiness, for your great grace, mercy and love, and especially for your wonderful salvation from the sin and fear that was in my life. Please, now, share with me your love so that I do share this good news with those around me who are still bound in sin and fear. Teach me how to point them to you, for you alone are the Savior.

Welcome, my son. That is indeed a heavy burden, but it is not from me, for my burden of love for my precious ones is easy and light, and is always a joy to bear. Cast those cares upon me, and learn of me. You mentioned eternal torment; do you remember our lesson on love? I am love, even to my enemies!

I am *one* God. My justice and my love do not contend within me! Even my justice is love, and though it is a fearful thing for those who must suffer under it, you must not fear for them, for I shall yet bring them to myself.

My son, I am the way. There is no other way but by me. All, even the infant, must hear the gospel and believe it in their hearts, to receive my salvation and enter my eternal life. Those lost in this age shall hear the gospel in ages to come, for I will preach it to them through you.

That is wrongly translated from my word by those who use manipulation or fear to try to drive souls into their own kingdoms, for their own glory. No one comes into my kingdom except by love, and love delivers from fear.

The correct translation is that throughout the ages, rebels are tormented until their hardness of heart is burned up and they see the terrible fruit of wickedness. All must learn obedience through suffering, but any who reject wisdom must also learn of me through judgment. It is better to preach the fear of me than fear of judgment, though those who face it do fear, and I do use that fear. But it is best to preach love for wisdom learned through discipline. Many have been held in bondage in kingdoms of men by fear of death and torment, resulting in heavy burdens, labor, and futility. Sin does result in punishment, but fear only binds; it cannot deliver. When I give you my burden for the lost, pray for them and trust me with them. When I bring them to you, preach the truth in love, and point them to me. Whether through hardness of heart with torment, or through meekness with gentle discipline, I ultimately save all creation from both sin and fear!



Lord, I remember you saying in the lesson on judgement that justice and discipline are for all but judgement is because of sin, for those whose hearts are hard. That doesn't seem to correlate with what I read in the Scriptures about all the suffering the apostle Paul had to endure. What about that passage in 1 Peter 4:12-19? It implies that every Christian must go through fiery trials for our testing, and we learn to rejoice as we share in your sufferings. Then it says that it is time for judgment to begin with the household of God! That seems to be inconsistent with what you told me.

Do you mean that the apostle Paul, and other saints who have suffered so much in the past, had hard hearts and needed your corrective judgments?

I seem to be going through a lot of discipline, testing, and trials, too. It seems like your fire is never through!

Does that mean that when I have fully entered into your kingdom, your fire ceases to hurt?

Oh, Lord, I am longing to enter fully into your kingdom. Please share with me what it is like to walk with you, even in the midst of your consuming fire, in the fullness of your love, joy, and peace, without any anxiousness, fear, sorrow, or despair. I receive your discipline with thanksgiving, for I see before me your vision of the glory of your Sabbath Rest.

Yes, judgment did begin with my precious chosen ones, my firstfruits of my kingdom. My apostles, prophets, and saints of ages past have suffered sorrow, pain, trial, and testing beyond your comprehension, as they began to fill up what was lacking in my body's afflictions. The pain and travail of bringing my body to birth was great. You, my sons, are actually my own physical body, brought to birth to join me in my kingdom. Judgement began with you, because no hardness of heart is able to enter into my kingdom! Judgment was my loving gift to burn up all your hardness of heart, so that you gladly receive the discipline of sons.

Yes, my son. All of them – and you as well – started with judgment. My consuming fire is always judgment to those who react against it. It becomes loving discipline when they learn to appreciate it. Paul did learn to appreciate it, but never fully entered into my kingdom. He looked forward to you entering it in this day.

I AM consuming fire! I never stop burning within my precious ones. But my fire is love! It only hurts those aspects of you that have not yet entered or matured into my perfection.

Oh, my son. Are you so eager for the wrong things? Love my discipline! Ask for it! Seek after it diligently! Let it burn, and let it hurt! There are many fiery trials necessary for the discipline of my sons to enter my kingdom. Do not try to get around them, but rather learn my wisdom, patience, endurance, joyfulness, thankfulness, and faithfulness through my discipline. You learn to display my victory to my creation by overcoming all the power of sin through the power of my righteousness. Do not be anxious; it is over soon enough.

The time has come! Judgment, then discipline, then testing, and now my righteousness begins shining in my sons, reconciling all of creation to my eternal life and purpose. From this time forth I bring my kingdom into the open for every eye to see, and I display to the world my righteousness in the sons of my perfection.

Lord Jesus, I come into your presence to sit at your feet and learn from you. Would you please tell me more about entering into your kingdom and dwelling with you there?

Yes, Lord! You said that you would send the baptism of fire, to burn up my old nature so that I could walk in your righteousness.

I do remember some times of suffering, but as I recall, my attitudes were not very good at the time. In fact, I remember a few pretty rotten attitudes...

Yes, Lord Jesus. I have no more doubt at all. I have tasted too much of your goodness and love, known too much of your mercy and grace, and seen too much of your glory and power to ever turn away from you again.

You mean the baptism of fire? Why do I need to learn more of it? You just said that I've entered your kingdom. So isn't it past now?

Okay, Lord. But I suspect that I already know the answer. In the lesson on discipline you said that you are the consuming fire, and of course you will never change. You will always be the unquenchable, consuming fire. [Sigh...] From my limited perspective it seems like there is never an end to the fire...

Wow! That means the fire is over, right?

Oh! I do love your fire, my Lord! I did not realize it was your glory! Burn brightly in me, so others may see your glory through me.

Welcome, my son! You have asked a very big question, but one which I love to answer for all who truly seek me. Do you remember our lesson on my righteousness?

Correct! Now, do you remember the times of trouble and pain you have had since then, and your responses to those times?

But your attitudes have grown! Each time I sent the fire, you were better able to recognize it as my discipline and quicker to respond with gratefulness. Now, you no longer resist the fire, for I have worked in you my gift of faith, and you have no more doubt about my great love and goodness for you.

That is right. You have entered my kingdom, and from now on there is no turning back. I will teach you to dwell with me continually, and walk in my perfect peace and fellowship. But first I would teach you a little of my fire.

[Laughing] You give yourself away! You can thank me for the fire, but you are so eager to be done with it! Let me tell you how the fire works, then you tell me if it is finished.

All fire is for discipline and instruction, but not all is for punishment. Before you received my grace you were walking under the power of my law. You could not keep it, so my fire was punishment. This taught you to long for my mercy and grace. After receiving me, the law had no more power over you, so my fire became discipline to teach you to pursue my righteousness, and testing to prove your faith. When your faith and hunger for righteousness became strong enough to ask for my baptism of fire, I sent that. The refining fire burned up your self-will and purified you. From now on you will do my will. This is your choice. I honor it, for it is my choice for you as well.

Wrong! Only now you love my fire, for now you see it as the brightness of my glory, given to you that you may grow and shine with my wisdom, my ways, and my perfection!

Oh Lord Jesus, I come to you a little confused and frustrated, after working all morning on that leaking roof. And this was supposed to be a day of rest! Will you please teach me how I can keep your Sabbath and enter into your Rest?

I don't despise your Sabbaths, my Lord! But I did not realize they were the key to entering into your kingdom. Now I am all the more eager to learn to keep your Sabbath day, for I love your kingdom and long to fully enter in. What really is the Sabbath?

I am trying to keep your Sabbath holy and not do any work in it, but the harder I try the more burden it seems to become! It seems like you are deliberately allowing circumstances which force me to work on your Sabbath, just when I'm determined to really rest!

Does that mean you do want us to respond to emergencies and do works of love and mercy on the Sabbath? It seems from Luke 6 and 14 that you worked and healed on the Sabbath; you even told the Pharisees that it was right to help their animals out if they fell into a well on the Sabbath.

Welcome, my son! I joyfully teach you about my Sabbath, for in truth, keeping my Sabbath is the key to entering into my kingdom! The law says not only, "Don't do any work on the Sabbath," but also, "Remember the Sabbath, to keep it holy." I did not create the Sabbath to be a restriction or heavy burden upon you, but rather to set you free from the every-day toil of making a living, so your soul and spirit can be refreshed and restored. It's like sleep restoring the body; if you despise my gift of sleep and work day and night, soon your body will fail you. So if you despise my Sabbaths, you are only hurting yourself, and your soul and spirit will slowly wither and die.

The Sabbath is a day of remembering, back to that first glorious Sabbath when there was no sin to cloud the perfection of my creation. Remember the beautiful garden I planted for you, the animals I gave you dominion over, the ground bringing forth joyfully of its strength for you. Remember your delight in walking with me by the water in the cool of the day. Remember my joy in looking over all that I had created, when I said, "Behold, it is very good!" Remember, Sabbath by Sabbath, and ponder, for as you are regularly reminded of the first Sabbath, you also catch the vision of the last Sabbath, my Rest I have prepared for you. That vision is very important, for you do not stumble into my kingdom by accident; you must want it enough to dedicate your heart to keep my Sabbath day holy.

You are correct, my son. Remember our lesson on peace? If I always gave you earthly peace you would never enter into my true peace. So also if I always gave you physical rest you would never enter my Sabbath Rest.

I did not work on the Sabbath. I gave myself willingly and completely to my Father, to accomplish his works through me. This was my joy and delight, a refreshing to my soul and spirit; it fed me, satisfied my thirst, and gave me strength for each day, not just on the Sabbath, but every day I spent on earth.

Oh, I see! That must be why Isaiah 58:3 tells me to turn away my feet from doing my own pleasure on your holy day. You want me to give up my own works and desires and do only what you set before me on your Sabbath.

The seventh day? But Lord, what about the first day of the week, Sunday? That is the day most of your sons have set aside for worship, rest, recreation, fellowship, and your work.

I have very much enjoyed your presence as I learned to seek your face on all days of the week, Lord. But now I thank you for teaching me to keep your seventh day, your Sabbath day, holy. I think I am beginning to understand how entering your Sabbath Rest fits in with what you said about your works already being finished. But... if your works are all complete, how can I do them?

Oh! I see! That is the word of reconciliation that you have given to us, as in 2 Corinthians 5:19. Thank you, Lord! I do choose to enter into your Sabbath rest, that I may learn to speak your word of reconciliation with your power and authority. I have lived in the six days of labor for too long! I willingly give up doing my own pleasure, that I may do your pleasure on this your holy Sabbath day!

Yes! I gave you six days to do all your work. The result was futility, bondage, and despair. Now open your eyes to the seventh day, my Sabbath, my kingdom day! Watch me now, as I do my pleasure through my chosen sons!

I meet with them and refresh them on any day they choose to meet with me. I always honor every action done by my people in obedience to the faith in their own hearts. None of you has perfect wisdom, but I do not condemn; rather I bless those who walk, step by step, in the light they have been given so far. Yet there is an added blessing available for those who enter my Sabbath Rest. I sanctified the seventh day of creation in a special way, as a perpetual memorial of my finished works. I made it holy above all other days, and none can change that, for my works are complete. You may enjoy my presence and my blessing on any day you choose to seek my face, but only on each Sabbath day do you walk with me into my kingdom, to be one with me in all that I am and in all my finished works.

My Sabbath Rest is walking with me in my kingdom. My works are perfect, complete for all time. But to you they do not seem so, for in this physical space-time realm your vision is limited. I allowed this so I could display my power and glory through the weakness of human flesh. I limited myself. I do nothing now apart from my human body. Through your prayers, prophetic words, and acts of faith I bring all that I have done into the realm of physical reality, so all may see. This work is Rest! It is peace, joy, and total delight, for as you enter in with all your heart, you find the work is already complete, the victory already won, and all that remains is for you to speak the words of faith by my Spirit in you and creation is set free! First, do my works on my Sabbath day, tuning your heart to mine and being filled with me and my love for my own. Then reach out in love to the hearts and lives of all my precious ones, and speak my living word in faith. Thus through you all things are reconciled to my original plan and purpose.

Hallelujah, I praise you, Lord Jesus Christ! Your wisdom, power, and majesty are shining brilliantly through your creation, and I bow to worship you and appreciate you in everything I see around me. Thank you for that lesson on your Sabbath Rest, for now I see you much more clearly through the fog of this physical realm. Even though there still seems to be a lot of pain, suffering, striving, and futility as satan rages all around, I certainly have a much better vision of your peace and your victory in it all.

Thank you, my Lord. I accept your invitation, for I long to enter into your Sabbath Rest and learn your ways and purposes. I long to be transformed, to partake of your divine nature. The burdens and cares of this daily life have become too much to bear, and I know that you have prepared something better for me.

What is your burden, Lord? I would love to help you bear it, especially if it is just an easy and joyful burden.

My son, to you satan appears to rage, and he is, for he knows his time is short. But to me he is already defeated, and all his works are lies. Have no faith in his works, even when your physical senses tell you they are true. Believe my word only, and you will see that all of his works are lies built upon a foundation of lies, for he was a liar from the beginning and is the father of it. You were conditioned by his lies more than you know. You believed all that you saw or felt, without regard for my word. Now it is time for all things to be restored! I invite you, come now into my Sabbath Rest, where I cleanse you of all past conditionings, heal you, and teach you my ways. Many know my acts – they are proclaimed from church pulpits every Sunday. But few take the time to open up their hearts to me on my Sabbath, to learn of my ways and purposes, my nature, the thoughts and intentions of my heart, so that we may be one heart, one mind, one will, one purpose, one love, and one Spirit of righteousness, truth, wisdom, compassion, and justice.

As you open up your heart to my Sabbath Rest, I teach you how to really rest! I know that you have earthly burdens and concerns. Now I show you a way to partake of my life, my unlimited wisdom, power and authority, to carry your burdens. Put them all aside for a day while I teach you to be what you were created to be. They do not get worse, waiting for one day, and you are refreshed and better able to carry them again when the day is over, for it is not you but my strength in you that takes up those burdens again, for I bear them in you. In exchange, I give you my burden. My burden is light and easy to bear, a real joy.

My burden is my love for my own, my people whom I created in my image, and my universe which I made to bless them. Together in my Sabbath Rest we do Father's will, reconciling all things to oneness with us. Loving, caring, encouraging, helping, healing, and sharing life, joy, and peace to a world where strife, hate, fear, and death seem so real, together you and I build the relationships of my kingdom.

Thank you, my Lord Jesus Christ! I do gladly give you all my weekly burdens and concerns in exchange for your one burden, your love for your people and your universe. Please teach me how to bear your burden so that it is always a joy and delight, as you promised. It is really exciting to me to hear that it is finally time for all things to be reconciled to you so that your kingdom fills the earth.

Yes, Lord. I willingly allow you to take my flesh nature and bury it with you at Golgotha. I give up all my rights and expectations, as well as all ambitions, lusts, appetites, and the desires of the flesh. I submit everything to your lordship. I no longer count even my own physical life as dear to me, but give it freely to you for discipline, testing, suffering, or even death as you see fit. Whatever it costs, I am determined to learn obedience.

You are my life, my king, my everything, and all glory belongs only to you. I do submit myself to your perfect body, of which you are the only head, and I enter wholeheartedly into your Sabbaths. Praise be only and always unto you, for all that you choose to do through your body! I am deeply grateful just to be a part of you in what you are doing, and I rejoice that you are willing to do it through me.

Hallelujah! I also experience the joy! Thank you for all that you have done, are doing, and will do, my Lord and elder Brother Jesus!

Yes, my kingdom, hidden within my precious ones for so long, is finally being revealed for every eye to see! You, my saints, are now in training to be that nation of kings and priests who shall rule in perfect oneness with me for a thousand years over all that I have made. For it is my righteousness, wisdom, justice, and mercy that rules in and through you. This is the Sabbath Rest that I have prepared for you, of which all previous Sabbaths are but a dim picture. The time is now, yet so many of my chosen ones are not yet ready; my heart aches for them, because of all the training, all the discipline they have to go through in such a short time. If you would rule with me, you must go through what I went through; yes, even the death and burial of your self-nature, that you may walk in oneness with me. You must learn obedience, as I learned obedience through the things that I suffered.

But I show you a better way. Enter now with wholehearted delight into my Sabbaths, for in them I teach you perfect obedience. I tasted death once for you so that you may forever have abundant, joyous, healthy, victorious life! My Sabbaths are your open door into my perfection! I am interceding at Father's right hand for you to enter fully into oneness with me in all that I am, that you may be as I am on the earth. You find your perfection in me and in my perfect, sinless body on earth. Together, as one body, we do Father's works in a far greater way than when I was alone on earth.

Yes, my son! Did you hear your confession? Know for sure that there is no turning back, for you have fully entered into my kingdom. With this lesson, the first volume of your book, *The Gospel of the Kingdom*, is finished. However, we are not finished with our grand adventure! We have much yet to talk about, and even more yet to experience as you grow up into all things in my perfect, sinless body. But from now on, remember, you dwell in my presence continually, for there is no sin in my kingdom, nothing to ever turn you away from me! What joy I share with you, my brother!

# *The Gospel of the Kingdom*

*Volume 2*

**Growing  
in the  
Kingdom**





Oh, my Lord Jesus Christ, what a joy it is to just come into your presence, drinking in of your glory and beauty and giving you my love and worship!

Leave, Lord? Well, I have to go about my earthly business of making a living so I can provide for my family, don't I?

Yes Lord. I'm sorry. Please, help me remember that you are my provider, and that all I have, even my family, belongs to you. Teach me how to stay in your presence always, and to do everything as unto you, especially in the area of making a living.

About five minutes.

Maybe ten or fifteen minutes, but I wouldn't be able to do very much after the first minute without air.

Not very spiritually alive, I would think.

What do you mean, "what you've already done or what you cannot do"?

I'm sorry, Lord. Are there many Christians like that?

I too rejoice that you come! You are always welcome to come into my presence, for your love for me is actually a sharing of my love. But why do you ever leave my presence?

I am your life! I am your physical provider as well as your spiritual life. Did you not commit your family, your job, everything, to me?

Very good, my son! That is the right request. Now hear carefully my response, for it is the most important lesson that any Christian can learn. The request you have just asked of me is, "Teach me to pray." Prayer is like arteries and veins carrying life-giving blood (which in this illustration represents me) to each cell of your body. How long would you live if your cells only get blood five minutes a day?

Correct. Prayer is also like the lungs, and I am the life-giving air. How long would you live if you only got air five minutes a day?

Exactly. Likewise, how alive do you think a "Christian" would be who averages what he calls "prayer" less than five minutes a day?

From my perspective, he is walking death, spirit, soul, and body, and my heart grieves for him. His "prayer" is but crying out for me to do what I've already done or what I cannot do, yet his cloud of deception is such that he can neither see my will nor my provision.

I have already provided everything he needs for abundant life, health, and joy, including the discipline that he needs to grow. I cannot give him all the lusts of his flesh nature, nor remove my hand of discipline, for I love him more than that. His "prayer" is short, for he sees little or no results. Though tradition says he must pray and even teaches him the words, yet he has never touched the power of my spirit nor is he aware of my desire to dwell continually within him and be his life.

No. None. They may appear religious, but they have neither seen me nor known me.

None? Oh, I get it. You don't consider them Christians, alive in Christ, until they learn to pray. So when and how do you do that?

What a joy and privilege to learn of prayer from you! Thank you that you dwell within me and never leave me, and for awakening my spirit to be aware of your presence in me.

Well, actually, Lord, when I am aware of your presence, I find that I'm not anxious about anything. You often provide for my needs even before I ask! All I really want to do is love and worship you and learn your wisdom.

Yes, Lord! When I become aware of your will in any area of my life, I take action to be sure that my life is in agreement. I would never want to violate your will, for I know that your will is best even if I don't understand it.

No, Lord. I've tried that, and have gotten into trouble. I am learning to wait on you for the right time, the right tools, the right methods, and the right opportunities.

Yes, and I love to be a prayer channel of your power to others, for then only you get the glory for your answers to my prayer. Thank you for being willing to provide clarification and confirmation, as I continue to wait on you concerning the more important issues.

I've noticed! And sometimes it seems that you delay your response because I'm not ready to hear it. I may be expecting a particular answer, while you may have a much bigger and better answer that I'm not yet able to hear. I know your answers are always best.

I do give you thanks, now and always. What a joy it is to dwell continually in your secret place of prayer and communion with you! I feast on your ways, for you are my life!

They will learn to pray as I fill them with my spirit, teach them to know my name, and tune their hearts to constant communion with me.

Your willingness to humbly come into my presence is the **first** step. You cannot learn of me second hand. Now, when you are in my presence, what are you most anxious about?

Very good! That is the **second** step. Prayer is leaving behind the anxiousness of the flesh to dwell in my presence, love and worship me, and learn of my wisdom. Tell me, do actions result from what you learn in my presence?

Excellent! That is the **third** step. Prayer is seeking to know my sovereign will, and then bending your life to match your faith. Those who pray in opposition to my will are taking my name in vain. Now, when you know my will, do you go right out and try to do it?

Correct! That is the **fourth** step. Prayer is not only knowing and doing my will, but also waiting on me for the right time and the right way to do it, and seeking my confirmation. Sometimes I ask you to pray that others of my sons may have the privilege of accomplishing my will by my power through your prayers.

Good! Waiting for confirmation is the best way to learn to know my voice. I always honor those who wait on me with active, persistent faith. And sometimes I delay my response to prayer to give you time to learn my ways and my wisdom, rather than just my power.

I am glad you're learning to trust my wisdom, even before you understand it. That is step **five**: walking by faith. That faith pleases me greatly. Don't forget the **sixth** step: to give me thanks for my answers, even before you see them. Thanksgiving is a big part of prayer.

Remember, I am the life of the whole world! The **seventh** step is to join in agreement with others in prayer, that my eternal life may flow and be multiplied in all my precious ones.

Lord Jesus, Thank you for allowing me to dwell in your presence and rest in your peace.

The first lesson was wonderful, and I love to learn more. For a subject that is supposed to be beyond understanding, I am learning a lot.

Yes, Lord. Even in the absence of war there can be tension, hatred, bitterness, suspicion, fear, and other things which prevent peace.

Well, because of his rebellion against you. He is always at war with you! Often without even being aware of what he is doing, he builds a wall of rebellion, keeping you away. That way he thinks he can be his own god and make his own decisions without interference from you.

But Lord, there is certainly not much oneness in the world today!

Wow! I had no idea that peace involved all that! Peace certainly does join together many things. But I sense that there is yet more?

That is fantastic, Lord Jesus, Prince of Peace! My heart overflows with gratitude for all that you have done! Thank you for breaking down my own personal wall of separation, so I can dwell in your presence continually, walk in your righteousness, and share your nature and character. I join with you in speaking your word of reconciliation everywhere I go. I see now why peacemakers are called sons of God! May I be a tool of yours to overcome the lie and reveal your peace to all creation.

You are welcome. Would you like to learn more about my peace?

The natural mind cannot really understand any aspect of my character, but you have my mind now. Do you know why real peace is more than just the absence of war?

Correct. Now tell me, why do you suppose a sinner cannot experience my peace?

Yes. That wall separates each sinner from me and from every other created thing. But in my death, that wall of separation is broken down, so that my peace again flows. The result is the joining together of all that was separated, so that the entire universe becomes one in me.

Patience, my son! All is finished, but all is not yet fully evident. Peace is many things, all being worked out in you my precious ones. Peace is faith: trusting perfectly in all I Am, all I say, and all I do. Peace is Prayer: the spirit communion that we share in my secret place so you can know my Father's will. Peace is righteousness: doing only what you know is right. Peace is love for me and all my creation, and a delight in my nature, my ways, even my law and my discipline. Peace is joy: the heart's response of realizing your created purpose. Peace is my Sabbath Rest: remembering what I have done, and knowing that it is very good.

Oh yes! Peace is dwelling in oneness with me and with all my creation. I broke down the wall of separation and made all things one in me. I destroyed the barriers of anger, hatred, suspicion, jealousy, bitterness, rebellion, and fear, once and for all, by my own blood shed for the sin of the whole world. Any barriers you may still see are but illusions created by the lie of satan, and given power to exist only by the misplaced faith of those who are being deceived. I have brought peace by reconciling all things to their eternal purpose in myself, that male or female, rich or poor, bond or free, Jew or Gentile – in fact all created things – may be one in me, that God may be all in all.

Oh my Father God, thank you for the fiery trials, the discipline, the purifying suffering, and the testing of my faith that you gave me to bring me into your kingdom, into your own holy presence. Please teach me more of your loving discipline and judgment, so that I may appreciate your great love even more. In your lesson on discipline, you talked briefly about judgment beginning with the house of God from 1 Peter 4:17, but I would like to see it now from a kingdom perspective.

What is the correct translation, Lord?

What do you mean, “Judgment *from* the house of God”?

Thank you, my Father. I willingly and joyfully submit to all that you’ve planned for me. Let your kingdom come and your will be done on earth, perfectly, as it is in heaven, even though me. I no longer fear the fire of your discipline, for I trust you totally in all things. I no longer count the cost, for it doesn’t matter anymore. Only let your perfect will be done in me, even though it means my own physical suffering and death. You alone do receive all honor, glory, praise, worship, and adoration now and forever through all ages into eternity.

You are welcome, my son. There were many fiery trials necessary to enter my kingdom. I am glad that you have learned to be patient, enduring, thankful, joyful, and faithful in them. Enter now into the joy of your king! It is time now for my truth to be known. The verse you quoted was translated incorrectly from my word by those who did not have the faith to enter into my kingdom. I allowed the wrong translation to stand during the age of sin, so that my body would be brought to birth. But it is now the age of my kingdom!

The time has come for judgment to begin from the house of God. Since even my righteous sons must be purified through my consuming fire, how could the disobedient and hard of heart expect to be spared my fire of judgment?

You have seen my love in my judgments; you have known my love in my discipline; you have sensed the joy of my consuming fire burning up all that was not of me so that now you dwell with me in my kingdom. It is time for you to take my high praises in your mouth and my two-edged sword of love in your hand and execute my vengeance upon the nations and my judgment upon the peoples. It is time for this world to burn with my fire, sent in love through you, my servant-sons. All that is not of me shall be burned up, so that my new heavens and earth come forth in peace and righteousness, in justice and truth. I now accomplish it all through you, that you share my joy and rule with me for a thousand years.

Rejoice my son! There are no accidents or tragedies, no pain or suffering, no fiery trials or discipline, no judgment or punishment in my kingdom! Judgment is punishment against sin. There is no sin in my kingdom! The fire of my discipline has already burned up all the rebellion of your old flesh nature, so now my fire flows freely through you to my creation, without harming you in any way. It is all only pure joy and delight as you enter into each new adventure with me in full faith that I have already won the victory, over all and in all!

Lord Jesus, I've been thinking lately of your wonderful grace. You taught me a little of your grace before. Would you please teach me more?

Yes, Lord. I rejoice that I draw my life from you. But what about the non-Christian? Does he draw his life from satan?

Everything? Even sin and evil?

But Lord, was it really through your grace that evil was permitted into the world, together with all its suffering and sorrow? That doesn't sound like grace, it sounds (pardon me for saying so) like meanness!

Oh, I get it. We are like the child demanding the knife or gun, and you are the father, trying to teach us how to use them without killing ourselves. Or you are the carpenter, teaching your son to use the shop tools safely. But what about liquor, drugs, or tobacco? They are addictive and destructive – pure evil. How can a good father ever let his son try them?

What about the one who continues to harden his heart and never looks to you, even when the fruit of his sin does destroy him? It seems to me that your grace actually keeps him from repentance, for he takes all that you give him and squanders it upon his fleshly pleasures, assuming that you will forgive him and save him anyway in the end.

Thank you, Oh my God, for the many-faceted splendor of your grace! I gladly receive all that you choose to communicate to me by it.

With delight! My grace is as a pipe to water; it is the channel through which all that is of me flows to you. I exist in self-sufficiency, but you cannot exist independently. No, not even for a single second. Do you know that every breath, every heartbeat, comes to you by my grace?

[Laughing] Where do you think that satan draws his life? It all comes from me, my son. I am the source and conclusion of all things.

Yes, my son, even evil. Though it was not of me, yet ultimately, I am responsible for it all. Lets just say that as an object lesson for my creation, I allowed the darkness as a contrast, so that the brightness and glory of my light is fully displayed. In the end, all that is not of me is consumed by my fire, so all that remains is set free and reconciled unto me.

Yes. But before you accuse me of meanness, consider a father whose son wants something that could harm him. A wise father may grant the request, but in a limited way, so the son learns wisdom without getting hurt.

Nothing is evil in itself. I made all things very good! They will not harm anyone if reserved for their proper use. But some things I never intended for human consumption. My grace allows the stubborn and hard of heart to try them and discover the suffering and tragedy that results. Some people only learn wisdom the hard way, and must come to the end of themselves before they will look up to me.

That is the key question, isn't it! What will you do with my grace? You who receive my grace with thankfulness are my sons. Those who resist it, presume upon it, or abuse it are the hard of heart. For some, I use trauma or tragedy to break that hardness of heart. For others, I wait; though their sin builds up a huge debt of suffering, yet in ages to come the suffering only prepares them for repentance. All creation will learn to appreciate my grace, for through it I communicate my wisdom, my love, and all that I am unto you, my Beloved.

Father, what a delight it is to Fellowship with you!

Father, remember the time when you closed our discussions with, "Go your way, and watch and see what I will do"?

At first I was pleased with this. Then as the months passed, I became grieved when you said that. I didn't want to go my way anymore, I only wanted to go your way.

Then, remember that bright and sunny day in my heart (though I recall it was overcast in the physical realm) when you said again, "Go your way, and watch and see what I will do." When I questioned you about it this time, you answered, "Your ways have become my ways!" Then you said, "So go my way, and watch and see what I will do!" How I rejoiced!

Father, what was going on?

Thank you, my Father! I love being one with you, even as my Elder Brother, Jesus, is one with you. I love and serve you willingly and joyfully! Thank you Father, for I do see what you are doing, and I delight in what I see.

Welcome, my son. I too take great delight in our fellowship.

Yes.

Yes, I know. I like that!

Yes. I too rejoiced.

My son, at times past your ways were not my ways, nor were your thoughts my thoughts. But my love, mercy, and grace covered you and allowed you to come into my presence and grow in my character. During this time, you were expanded by what you saw of my righteousness, so that my vision for the ages began to fill you. As you came into perfect agreement with me concerning my vision, our ways became one.

As years passed, the unity in our fellowship grew, such that we became as "two fellows in one ship." From now on, wherever the ship goes, so go all on board! My ship is my vision for the ages, my plan of the ages. You are now on board my ship and therefore your ways have become my ways and my ways have become your ways. So be enthused; watch and see what I am doing! I am doing much in and through you, my beloved.

Blessed are the pure in heart, for they see who I Am and what I am doing. Thank you, my son in whom I am well pleased. Go in peace. Go my way. Watch and enjoy what I am doing!

Holy Father, I rejoice before you continually, not only because you have placed your gift of joy within my heart, but also because you command me to rejoice in all things, and I love your commandments. But I must admit that it was a little hard recently.

So if I were to go around with a sad face, and allow myself to be discouraged and depressed, it would dishonor you. Others might see it and think that I'm unhappy with you, or angry or bitter at you, or even that I've lost my faith!

Well, I wasn't really trying to be attractive...

Wow! I had never thought about it like that. And if later they see me sad or discouraged...

But it isn't! My joy is forever! If I am tempted to be sad, that is what is only temporary.

No, Lord, of course not. I get the point. Thank you for granting me strength to overcome that temptation to sadness, discouragement, and depression.

But because you love me, you are determined to rejoice anyway, even through difficulties. Now I show you why that is so important. Joy is worship and honor unto me. The joy in you witnesses to my goodness in your life. The joy radiating from your face tells everyone around you that you know me, and love and trust me.

That is true. You must never forget that you bear my name, my son. Bear it well, for many cannot see me except through you. Has it ever occurred to you how beautifully attractive is a joyful, contented countenance?

But I choose to be attractive through you, for the adornment of a joyful countenance does not stimulate the flesh but rather awakens the spirit. There are many who will join you in my kingdom because they saw me through the joy on your face, and, suddenly awakened in their spirits, realized that they wanted me more than anything else in the whole world.

Then they too may turn away in sadness and despair, perhaps to turn back to the misery and hopeless futility of this world's ways. For a brief moment they saw your joy and thought it was really possible to escape the bondage of sin and death! But if they see your joy is only temporary, they will know there is no hope.

You only know that because you know me. Others who do not know me, cannot know that. Tell me, do you think they will want to get to know me if those who call themselves by my name live in sadness and depression?

You're welcome. You already know that joy is a fruit of my Spirit, and you know that it is a gift of my love. Did you know that it is also an act of obedient faith? Go back and review the lesson on faith. When you set your heart to do my will, you receive my gift of faith by my Spirit. My Spirit empowers you to do my will. It is my will that you be joyful. Therefore, you determine in your heart to obey, and lo! in your obedience you receive my gift of joy, bearing my fruit of joy to those around you.

Just one question, Lord. That seems so simple. Why are so many Christians so seldom joyful?

Yes, Lord! But you have promised that you will never leave us nor forsake us!

Ah ha! Back to the lesson on faith! As our faith-dedication is united with your gift of faith-action, we are enabled to stand firm against satan's messengers of despair, even during those times of testing or discipline when it seems to our minds that you have left us alone. Thus we can rejoice and worship you, even in the time of testing or discipline.

I have also noticed that when I am determined to rejoice through those times of testing or discipline, that it helps me to get through it easier.

Will you please give me an example to help me understand?

But Father, what about all the miraculous healing that Jesus did while on the earth? He certainly sped up the healing process, but the people were crying out to him in despair!

Let's say that I am a mighty king, and you are my queen. And let's say that I must leave you to go into a far country, and you do not know when, or if, I will return. Will you not be sad?

You and I know that, my son. But there are many who call themselves by my name who do not really know me. For them, it seems that I come or go at a whim. They do rejoice exceedingly when they sense my presence, but wallow in despair when they think I've gone.

Yes. In those times of testing or discipline your faith is greatly strengthened by your very determination to rejoice, worship, and trust me through it all. This pleases me greatly, and demonstrates to all creation that you are truly mine, for you passed my test of faith. I am honored by that more than all the expressions of worship during times of blessing.

Yes it does, and in ways that you do not yet fully understand. The many levels of my law upon which I founded the universe are related into one harmonious whole. As you obey these principles that I am teaching you now, you are also fulfilling other principles that are beyond your experience and understanding.

Most of my children are at times tested by physical illness. The immature cry out to me for healing, get angry or bitter, blame me, or even lose the little faith they have. But as you learn to walk in these principles, you rejoice in the pain, trust me, thank me, and seek my wisdom in it. In so doing, you fulfill higher laws of my creation which speed your healing and build immunity against future illness.

Children are treated differently from mature sons. The instantaneous miracle may aid the seed of faith in a child, but how many retained that faith? They saw my acts and marveled – then shouted, "Crucify him!" at the end. I am teaching you my ways that you may be one with me. That which is easily gained is also easily forgotten, but what you gain through the fire of testing is yours forever.



Lord Jesus, what a joy it is to begin to see things from your perspective! I know that I was only created to understand time, but I would love to learn more about your eternity.

I think so, Lord. Wasn't the first epoch when you created the universe? In the beginning it was darkness and chaos. Your Spirit brooded over it, and said, "Let there be light!" Then you filled it with your glory.

Hades? With its lake of fire and brimstone? Even before there was any sin or any need for punishment in the earth?

Ahh, I understand. Then when you created the universe and assigned Lucifer as ruler over it, he rebelled against you. So is that why the physical universe started out without form and in that awful chaos?

I don't understand that part about the purpose of this last age. Why did you create human flesh?

It greatly excites me to hear you say, "this next epoch, now just begun"! Do you mean the "kingdom age" that I have been longing for has now begun?

Thank you, Lord! That is the best news I have ever heard! But that sounds like a lot of ages; will time ever end?

I rejoice that your vision is becoming mine. I am happy to teach you a little of eternity, but first you must learn more about time. I created time for my children to mature. I wove it into the fabric of your existence. You can never escape it – not until I bring you to my Father in eternity. Do you know when time began?

Began with chaos? [Laughing] From eternity's perspective I saw the glory in the beginning. But that was not the first epoch. Even before my physical creation, I created time, angels, and heavenly realms, including Hades.

There was sin in the heavenlies! Lucifer, my greatest and most powerful covering cherub, lifted himself up in pride from the beginning.

No, no. The chaos was good - a basic building material. Lucifer questioned the righteousness of my ways, thus becoming my adversary, satan. He seems bent on returning you to the chaos from which you came. I have given him time to find out that his ways are not better. That is the purpose of the last epoch, and one reason why I created human flesh. In this next epoch, after he reaps the full harvest of his evil ways, he will agree that my ways are right, and that question will be fully settled for all time.

The weakness of human flesh, combined with the power of my righteousness in you, has defeated satan and revealed the lie of his ways. This displayed the goodness of my ways to all creation. In this next epoch, now just begun, we are destroying satan's works and restoring creation into harmony with my righteousness.

Yes it has! In the kingdom age you rule with me for a thousand years, restoring my peace and righteousness to earth. But time does not end there. In the ages to come you will work with me restoring right relationships to all my life forms, and maturing in my perfection.

Time ends when growth reaches full maturity and eternal life has a physical body perfected in all of my divine nature and character.

Father, I thank you for that overview of time, but I still am eager to learn your wisdom about eternity.

Not anything, Lord? But haven't you given me little glimpses of eternity before?

No. I suppose in my flesh I really am like a worm to you. But I believe the scriptures that say I am transformed by the renewing of my mind, and I have the mind of Christ. Could you explain eternity to that part of me?

Well, it seems to me that before time began, there was eternity, and after time ends, there will still be eternity. The only difference will be, in the past eternity you were all alone, perfect and complete in yourself, but without your Bride. While in the future eternity we will be with you, enjoying you, and forever growing in your glory and wisdom.

I thought the scripture said that I am now a new creature in Christ, and that I now have the mind of Christ.

You're right, Father! I don't really understand. I have trouble conceiving of heaven and hell as being only temporal, and I especially have trouble with my always being a part of your body, even from eternity past. Oops! You said there is no eternity past or future, only now? I have to give it up to you and accept it by faith, Lord, for it is truly beyond my understanding. Thank you for the faith to know that you are bringing me there – to yourself in eternity – in spite of my limited human understanding.

I would love to explain eternity to you, my son, but as a human being, created in time, you cannot understand anything without first putting it into a time perspective.

Yes, my son. But you only understand to the extent that you have my mind, see from my perspective, and are one with me in purpose. You see, eternity is a totally different life form, as different from human life as human life is from worm life. Could you explain your daily appointment schedule to a worm?

I will explain, but do not be surprised if you do not comprehend. First, go back and review our discussion on time. Now consider all the ages and epochs. Study time for a bit, and see if you can tell me where eternity fits into it all.

I do not criticize you for trying to fit eternity into two very long periods of time, one past and one future, for that is the best the human mind can do. But you are wrong on all points. Eternity is now; my eternal name is I Am. There is no past or future with me. I dwell in eternity. I do not grow in glory and wisdom, for I am already perfect in glory and wisdom, as well as every other aspect of my nature and character. To the extent that you have been transformed into my nature, you have entered eternity; all aspects of your being that are still growing and changing remain within time.

Yes, I did say that, for I see the end from the beginning. I see you as already perfect and complete, mature in myself. How I long to give you the vision to see yourself as I see you! Time meets eternity only now, but eternity meets time always, at all points. All of time is seen from eternity, but eternity cannot be seen in time. Every created thing, everything that changes, grows, or decays, the universe, yes, even heaven and hell, are all temporal. The only things eternal are the things within me, which flow from me and return to me. When you have fully entered into eternity with me as a part of my body, you will find that such you always were and such you always will be.

I rejoice in bowing before you in worship and praise, my Lord Jesus Christ, for you are my strength, my health, my joy, my life!

Yes, Lord! I love to learn from you about whatever you wish to share.

Well, I suppose that life is anything that is moving and growing, while death is anything that is decaying, decomposing. So spiritual life must be anyone who is growing in your nature and character, while spiritual death is anyone becoming more evil, or less like you.

You are talking about spiritual death, not physical death, I presume?

But you said death will be destroyed?

Wow! What a delight that will be! And I will be privileged to view that fantastic sight?

No more death! What a precious promise! Thank you, my Lord! May your eternal life even now flow through me, releasing creation from the futility of bondage to evil and death, and setting all things free to receive your life.

I rejoice with you, my son, as you exult in my life that I give to you. I am glad that you appreciate it. May I teach you more about it?

You love to learn because my life in you is meek and teachable! I also learned wisdom and grew in grace when I took on human flesh. What do you think life and death are?

Very good! Life is all that flows from me, in agreement with my nature and character, for I Am life. Death is anything out of harmony, out of balance, separated from me, or in any way different from me. Life, even what you call lower life forms, always willingly obeys me and reflects various aspects of my glory. Death, though still under my command, cannot yet willingly obey me or give me glory.

Both. The physical portrays the spiritual. Death is an evil enemy to be hated; it has held many in its terrible bondage, and will hold many more until it is finally cast into the lake of fire and destroyed. Those walking in sin are walking in bondage, enslaved by death. They have no way out but by my mercy and grace.

Yes. Death, evil, its bondage, and all who have been held fast therein, will be cast into the lake of fire and totally consumed by my fire. When my flames (which no one can quench) die out, you will see the most amazing sight: all satan's mightiest trophies of evil, yes even Lucifer himself, completely purified and set free! Just as physical death ends at the door into my spirit realms, so spiritual death ends in me and my life. All creation will rejoice as these my beloved finally bow to my righteous lordship and receive my grace and love.

More than view, you will participate! For it is through you that I chose to flow my eternal life to them. You who have willingly learned obedience through suffering, demonstrate the riches of my grace, the beauty of my wisdom, and the power of my righteousness to all who were dead. In ages to come, my life, eternal, abundant, joyous, and free, is all and in all!

Good morning, Lord! Thank you for a good night's sleep! I bow before you at your feet, refreshed and ready to learn more of your wonderful love, power, and glory.

Forgotten? I don't think I was ever aware! All I remember is some fragmented dreams of my young son operating some big, heavy farming equipment, and my talking with the foreman about his not having accidents with machinery because of our relationship with you.

Yes, Lord! I do remember a vague awareness of being perfectly at peace, full of delight at all that was happening in the dreams. Even that heavy machinery didn't seem to bother me at all. But how is sleep like death?

Yes, Lord, I probably would be tempted. But you know how much I love you! I would not fall to that temptation, but would agree to go with you anytime, anywhere.

Well, uh... no. Death is an unknown, Lord. I've never been through it. There is a certain amount of fear in anything new, particularly something so, well, so irreversible!

Thank you, Lord. I gladly receive your gift of faith to believe that. By your grace I'll never fear death again. But tell me, what happens to a person after death? Does a Christian always go right to heaven?

Many realms, Lord? What do you mean?

Thank you, Lord! I do appreciate the picture of heaven that I share here with you, and I look forward to the joys of the real heavens you have prepared for me. I will never again fear death! But I have compassion on those who are living in bondage to the fear of death, in this dim picture of hells that await them.

And good morning to you, my son! We had good fellowship last night as you slept, but you have forgotten. I open up your memory to appreciate our night of sharing together!

You do not realize how near you are to death when you sleep, or you would thank me each morning for waking you up! Your fragmented dreams are but relaxing exercises of the brain; I was in them, for your pleasure. But I also was communing with your spirit, even as your body slept. Remember my peace and joy?

You lose your illusion of being in control. In sleep, as in death, you are entirely in my hand. If I came to you in your sleep and asked you to forsake your earthly body and stay forever in my heavenly realm, you would not hesitate for an instant. However, if you were awake you might be tempted to argue with me, with an eye toward temporal things.

Oh? Then you have no fear of death?

Here, take my love, and cast out that fear! Death is not an unknown, for you go through it every time you fall sleep! And it is also not irreversible. Many who have died I have then returned to earth to complete their mission.

Yes! Always. And the unrighteous go directly to hell, as well. But it is not as simple as that. Heaven is many realms of adventure and growing with me, learning my wisdom and appreciating my beauty. Hell is many realms of separation from me, seeing my wisdom and beauty from afar and learning by experiencing the terrible fruits of evil.

You are in heaven now, as you fellowship with me, just as surely as a wicked person dwells in hell here on earth. But this earth is only a dim picture of the real world, my spirit world, and the finest of heavens and the darkest of hells here are but a shadow of realities you will find after death. Hades is a very big place! You who here dwell in heaven, look forward to death. Those who dwell now in hell rightly fear it.

My beloved Lord Jesus Christ, what a joy it is to dwell with you and learn from you! I bow at your feet and take delight in your presence.

I see heaven so dimly, Lord. Would you please teach me more about it?

Thank you, Lord! I gladly receive the fullness of joy and peace that comes with my abiding continually in your presence. You mentioned other meanings of heaven? Did you mean the sky, planets, and stars, as referred to in Psalms 8 and 19?

I also am eager to share it with you, my Lord. But from your lesson on time, I gather that we won't be spending all of eternity exploring the heavens with you?

And what of hell, and the lake of fire, and all the evil souls burning there? Will they not to some extent spoil our enjoyment?

The gift of the ages is all those evil souls who have been purified and given life? That helps me understand the lesson on life and death. What a wonderful gift to us, and to them! Praise you forever, Oh my Lord Jesus Christ!

I am glad that you do, my son, for here with me you are dwelling in heaven, the place that I prepared for you from the beginning of time.

Yes. The word heaven has several meanings, but the primary one is simply dwelling in my presence. That is always heaven, even on earth. When your physical circumstances seem to tell you otherwise, they are a lie. Rest in me, rejoice, and be at peace, for you always have joy and peace in my presence.

Those are merely the physical heavens, which I created to portray my spiritual heavens. There are many levels of physical heavens: the sky or atmosphere, space, the solar system, deep space, the galaxy, deeper space, clusters of galaxies, and so on. I assure you, man has just begun to comprehend the vastness of my physical heavens! Likewise, there are many levels of heavens in my spirit world, which is the reality of which all you see physically is but a dim picture. You who love my presence, my heaven on earth, will delight exceedingly in the ages to come! We shall romp together in high adventure, exploring the height, breadth, width, and depth of the glory of my wisdom, knowledge, and power. What a time that will be! I am eager to share it with you!

Do not be anxious! Eternity is not what you understand it to be. You will be participating and entering more and more into my eternity all during those ages. Just relax and enjoy my heavens, my wedding gift I have prepared for you, my beloved bride! What a honeymoon I have prepared, where age to age unfolds only greater depths of love, joy, and peace!

Far from it, my precious one! It will be as a wedding cake baking in the oven. We will be eagerly waiting and joyously watching as the smoke of purification rises through the ages. When all that is not of me is burned up, my flames will have nothing left to burn and will die out. Death, evil, and all its bondage will be swallowed up in victory as we celebrate the gift of the ages, the triumph of righteousness!

I bless you and praise you, my precious Lord Jesus Christ! It is perfect joy to awake and find myself in your presence! I dedicate this day to growing in your wisdom, that I may be useful to you in your kingdom.

Okay Lord, if you say so, but...

Yes, Lord. I sense a brightness and warmth – a caressing sort of warmth that goes beyond this cloudy day. I see grounds stretching out all around me, all at different angles, not matching the physical ground. I see thousands of beautiful, huge, powerful-looking beings dressed in shining armor, standing or walking on these various grounds. They all look happy and contented; some appear to be guarding something, but most seem idle.

Wow! Even as I began to think of voicing praise to you, the angels all brightened up with glowing smiles and got more excited about whatever it is they are doing. Many even seemed to be taking my praise thoughts and lifting or throwing them upward. But why are there so many angels, and why do most of them seem idle?

Lord, why does there seem to be different levels of ground, at odd angles to each other?

Your joy is also mine! Let us walk together for a while through my spirit realms, for I would give you a glimpse of my real world, of which the physical world is but a dim picture. Open your eyes of spirit and tell me what you see.

You hesitate because of past conditionings against spiritism and the occult. You are wise to not stray alone in realms too deep for you, where beings mightier than you stand ready to deceive and devour. But you have committed your day to growing in my wisdom, and I will honor that. Take my hand and fear not!

The brightness and warmth is typical in my first heaven, which you have dimly perceived. This level is closest to the time and space of the physical universe. All spirit beings must come to this level to contact the realm of the physical, either for good or for evil. Higher levels of heavens are closer to eternal life; it is brightest as one approaches my throne, which is in the highest heaven. Lower levels of hells are pits of darkness where evil conceives and bears its terrible fruit of torment. The warmth there does not caress, it burns. The beings you see are angels. Now, voice praise to me.

They are many angels, my son, because you are unspeakably precious to me, and the work I now do through you is supremely important. I have assigned them to protect you and my work through you. They seem idle because you and I are in perfect harmony. No demons are near, so my angels are alert, but at rest. They got excited in your praise because their greatest joy is to take the willing praise of the human spirit and amplify it toward my throne.

The physical world has only four dimensions: length, width, depth, and time. The heavens have one more dimension: the nearest words you have for it are “perspective” or “relative.” Many different things happen at the same time in the same place, in perspective (or relative) to different people on which they may focus. You were seeing different levels of angelic functions for a few of my saints around you.

Far off I seem to see a little activity. It looks like some poor demon was blocked by a group of angels, and cast down through a hole in the ground.

And that is temptation?

What happens in this spirit realm when you and I are not in harmony?

Lord, would you tell me what things might weaken the angelic guard you have placed around me?

That sounds awful! How do we deal with all these tempters?

Thank you, my Lord Jesus Christ! You are my victory! I praise you for this glimpse of your mighty angels, and I stand firm against the demon hordes by your wonderful name, your precious blood, and your righteousness! I do not love my own life, even to the death, for I totally trust in your eternal life in me!

A demon of doubt thought he had an entrance to you. He figured that this was “all too far out for you to swallow,” and thought that you would let him past my guards. He was wrong, and got cast out of this heaven. I allowed this to illustrate to you the perspective dimension. Had you entertained doubt in your heart, your lack of faith would have opened a plane in which that demon could have direct access to you, even though my angels were all around.

It certainly is! I do allow you to be tempted at times, that you may learn of my discipline and deliverance power. But as long as we remain in active communion and perfect harmony, you will never fall to temptation. Satan and his forces hate and flee from my presence in you.

The placid scene you see becomes a violent battlefield. I prefer that you not view that, for you may be tempted to fear. Human focus on the fierce battles in my realm can damage your relationship to me, for then you are tempted to lose your focus on my victory and peace. It is best for you to see into the spirit realm only when I open your eyes for a specific purpose.

Unbelief, doubt, fear, anger, bitterness, deceit, unthankfulness, greed, selfishness, lust, moral perversion, pride, self-reliance, carelessness, idolatry, witchcraft, sorcery, disobedience, rebellion... are but a few of the many tempters which lie in wait against my people. Anything not of me, not in agreement with my nature and character, weakens your guard, opening up perspectives for demons to enter.

You don't. They are all too powerful for you. My name, my blood, and my righteousness deals with them, for I already won the victory. Focus on me. Rejoice that you bear my name. Be grateful that you are purified by my blood. Walk in obedience to my righteousness. Stand firm in the faith that my life is abiding in you, displaying the principles my kingdom through you! Then you do not fear what I do with your physical body, for my angels are empowered with my victory in all our spiritual warfare.

Lord Jesus, I see so much demonic oppression all around me. Please teach me more about spiritual warfare. I want to be effective for your kingdom, and not spend all my energy fighting with demons. It seems like such a heavy burden.

Yes, Lord. I recall your lesson on the Sabbath Rest, and I am learning to rest in your victory even in spiritual warfare. Please teach me how to be effective, rather than spinning my wheels in futility.

Uh, my own choice, I guess. Perhaps I should have asked you about it, but that little task has gotten so routine that I didn't.

What if you had not inspired me to do it?

Just what do you mean when you say that I am "of you"?

So those not filled with your Holy Spirit are filled with the spirit of antichrist?

Sometimes it seems like I am running in those same paths, Lord! How can I see above all that, to your victory?

I don't wish you to spend any of your energy fighting with demons. I have already won the victory over satan, all his demons, all his works, and everyone associated with him. I do ask that you manifest, or enforce, my victory wherever I send you, but that is not a heavy burden; rather it is a joy and delight.

"Spinning your wheels in futility" is based on a lie from satan which conditioned you to a wrong perception of your relationship to me and to my creation. By whose choice did you brush your teeth last night?

Wrong. That reveals satan's lie, which says that you have an independent "self" to choose. I inspired your action, though you were not aware of me at the time.

Then you would have "forgotten" to do it, for you are of me, and my Holy Spirit guides you.

I designed the physical to be ruled by spirit, through your soul (mind, will, and emotions). Your soul is actually just a vessel, filled either with the spirit of Christ, or the spirit of anti-christ. There is no third alternative. You are of me, that is, you are filled with, ruled over, and guided by my Holy Spirit. Thus "your spirit" is now my Spirit, for there is only one true Spirit.

Right. They have neither seen me nor known me. All their deeds, no matter how innocent looking, are actually inspired by their father, the devil. They think they are running their own lives, but they are deceived by satan, the father of lies. In ignorance, they are actually running in his paths of pride, selfishness, and rebellion, which is futility and death.

The answer to that question is the answer to your effectiveness in spiritual warfare. Make no provision for the flesh, to fulfill its lusts. Erase from your mind that deceitful concept of operating as an independent self, with the freedom to choose your own good or evil. That is a lie from satan! You are free to choose only in accordance with your nature.



But, Lord. I have a sinful nature, too! I know that you have redeemed me, and I do reckon my sinful nature dead and buried with you, that I may live only in accordance with your divine nature. But satan seems to be working hard to convince me that my sinful nature has been resurrected and continues to guide some of my choices.

That's it, Lord! He brings a kind of haze to my mind, so that I forget that I am totally yours, led by your Holy Spirit in all things. Then if I do forget, he is able to make me think I am making my own independent choices, which are actually inspired by him.

Thank you, Lord. But I sense that I'm not much good in spiritual warfare when I'm in the "dark valleys."

Yes, Lord! I receive all of that, with heartfelt gratefulness. Thank you for your gift of faith to believe that you are accomplishing your perfect will through me, even though I have yet so far to grow in your perfection. And thank you for the armor that you provide. I will be careful to put it on each day, so that I may be more effective in spiritual warfare.

Does that mean that whenever I discern a wrong spirit or demon that I can simply speak whatever words you give me and then I'll see them defeated by your power and authority?

Do you now see the deception in that, my son? As you were growing up in me, I allowed you to wrestle with (and even fall prey to) your sin nature sometimes, so you could learn my wisdom in dealing with it, and appreciate my victory. But now that it is dead, all satan can do is try to cloud your mind to tempt you to forget your position in me.

Wrong, my son. He may have done that in the past, but he can do it no longer, for now you are of me, remember? I totally overrule any inspiration he may have for you, and I work all things out for your good and my glory. Even when you forget your position in me, I have not left you! I am still guiding and protecting, though to you it may seem like a dark valley. I use those times to strengthen and mature your faith.

That is correct. It is time for you to consider those days past forever. I invite you now to come up higher into my secret place, your awareness of my presence in you continually. Grow in that awareness, until in everything you do you become aware of my Holy Spirit's overruling guidance. You are my chosen vessel, through whom I accomplish my own perfect will on my earth! You are filled with my Spirit and clothed with my righteousness, and you have all the weapons of our warfare!

You have already put my armor on! Now I will never allow you to take it off, for it is part of what I have done in you, and what I do stands forever. Your effectiveness in spiritual warfare no longer depends upon you or what you do (or forget to do). You have committed yourself totally to me, and I have accepted your heart's commitment. Your obedience, step by step, to my Holy Spirit's direction, enforces my victory in perfect accord with my will.

Not quite. You do as I lead, speak the words I give, see my victory by faith, and then walk on with me. Then I will do Father's perfect will with the demons. You don't have to see it to be effective. To see is just an added blessing.

Lord Jesus, I've been reading about your last supper with your disciples. I am eager to learn more from you about the part that says, "Let a man examine himself before eating the bread and drinking the cup. He who eats and drinks, eats and drinks judgment on himself if he does not judge the body rightly. For this reason many among you are weak and sick, and some sleep. But if we judged ourselves rightly, we would not be judged." [1 Cor 11:29-31]

Yes, Lord. From verse 26: "For as often as you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord's death until He comes."

Thank you, Lord Jesus. I appreciate your life in me more than anything else in this world. But what does "...judging the body rightly" mean?

Your life within your creation?

I am sorry, Lord. I repent for times when I ate or drank without remembering that it is only your life which I partake. I've been guilty of separating the physical from the spiritual. I am just beginning to see from your perspective how intimately connected everything is.

Thank you, my Savior! But, now that I have received your cleansing and your new vision that goes along with it, I sense that there is more yet within those verses.

Yes, Lord? As in 1 Corinthians 12:12, which speaks about all your saints metaphorically like members in a physical body?

Yes, my son. I want my body on earth to be strong and healthy, therefore I have inspired you to pursue me in that passage. First, you must recognize that it is my body that you eat and my blood that you drink, whenever you partake of physical food and drink. Don't wait for some "religious ceremony" to remember my death bringing life to you! I deliberately tied the remembrance of my death to the most common of everyday occurrences.

And now that I have come to you, be aware of the power of my life flowing in and through you with every bite you take, bringing you my health and strength in body, soul, and spirit.

Many eat and drink blindly, for their own pleasure or to meet their physical needs. By not discerning my life within my creation, they eat and drink only death to themselves.

I, and I alone, am life. All creation exists by my living word, continually upholding and feeding every particle of my universe. Even a sparrow gratefully receives seeds of life from my hand. Why must mankind invent "natural laws" to alienate me from their daily bread?

You are forgiven. I now cleanse your mind from the conditioning of satan which caused you to view the commonplace functioning of the everyday world as anything other than a continuous expression of my life in my living word flowing through all that I have created.

A lot more! Discerning my body is recognizing me in all my creation, but now take a closer look at my precious ones, my saints, the part of my creation best reflecting my image.

Yes. In my realm my body is one, perfect and complete, sinless, and full of wisdom, power, authority, and love. But don't divorce the spirit from the physical. If one of my members divorces himself from the whole and sets his focus on his own weakness and imperfection, he partakes of death, rather than my life. You are perfect, but only in me and my body!

That implies that I am isolating myself from your perfect life when I isolate myself from the saints, even though they are incomplete and imperfect. Wow! No wonder those who don't discern the body rightly are weak and sick!

But Lord, what about those who are living in sin, those who insist upon wrong doctrines, or those who misuse your gifts and provisions? It seems to me that most of the members of your body on earth have at least a few major issues somewhere. They take your precious life and waste it on their...

Again, I beg your forgiveness, Lord. I have judged many according to what I have seen with my physical eyes, unaware of my own sin and thus lifting myself up over them in pride. I have often not recognized your sovereign working in your precious ones to accomplish your will within each one in your own time and way. But I ask again, Lord, how am I to view those who claim to be a part of your body, yet are living in open, flagrant sin? They are dishonoring your holy name and causing others to blaspheme! By not dealing with their sin, it gives others an excuse to tolerate their sins, thus bringing shame upon your church!

But still, I cannot just ignore the sins within the church. According to 1 Corinthians 5, we are supposed to judge gross immorality within the church!

Thank you, Lord! I appreciate 1 Corinthians 11 and 12 far more now that I see more clearly the oneness of your body. I praise you for your marvelous wisdom! You have placed us as imperfect members in a perfect body, so that we may learn to really love one another by seeing how much we need one another.

That's correct. Those who fail to recognize me within each member of my many-membered body, are cutting themselves off from aspects of my life which they could (and should) be receiving through those other members.

Who are you to judge? I am the head of my body! I will forgive and deliver my precious ones from sin how and when I wish. I correct wrong doctrines when I choose. I distribute my gifts and provisions however I will. Your waste does not diminish my infinite supply. When you judge another, you are only seeing in them what is also deep within your own flesh nature, and thus bringing condemnation upon yourself. I allow you to see their sin only because I want you to do something about it, but it may be that I only want you to repent of that sin in your own heart, that you may be cleansed and thus able to pray for them.

See them as I see them, my son. I see their immaturity and inability to save themselves from their sins or wrong doctrines. I do not condemn, but rather I flow to them my life in whatever ways they can receive it, at the rate they can receive it, and with the right amount of discipline and love so that they will grow and mature in my body. As you discern my body rightly you see me working within my precious ones. Instead of just reacting against what is not of me, minister to all that is of me, encouraging and helping them to grow in me. This is a flow of my life, instead of death.

Correct. After you are pure, I will give you the right words of love which can set them free – if they accept it. But whether they do or not, continue to believe me for them. At the right time my grace is irresistible unto salvation, no matter how evil the sin or wrong the doctrine. Also continue to learn from me through each one of them, for I grant you wisdom through everything in my creation, even the wicked. My body is one! It is perfect and complete, as well as strong and healthy, with all necessary gifts and provisions, as my life flows freely from, through, and to every body member.

Father, I am sad to see so much futility all around me. Why did you subject this world to futility, and when will it all be set free?

Yes, Father, that is what I meant. I still see so many birds eating worms, cats killing birds, and so forth, as if all creation lives to prey upon each other. Especially the people. They are grasping, hating, and fighting – rushing frantically about in the mad pursuit of empty pleasures which result only in their suffering and death. When will they all be set free?

Father, I've tried! I've preached your gospel to the moles in the lawn, the slugs and bugs in the garden, the cats, birds, horses, and dogs, the animals in the zoo, and every person who will listen to me (which isn't many). They just don't seem interested in being set free!

Yes, I agree that you have been changing me. You have set me free from the power of sin in my life; from evil thoughts, improper desires, and fleshly appetites; from anxiousness and fear; from accidents; from the bondage of poor health; and from wrong relationships – Thank you, my Father! Truly you have set me free from futility! But how does that help the rest of your creation?

Wow! Is that when we get our resurrection bodies, Father?

You say this will happen soon?! How soon, Father? Freedom from futility! All creation, look out! Here it comes! Hallelujah! I am so eager to see it with my own eyes.

Review our lessons on peace, my son! There is no futility when you are dwelling in my peace! What you meant to ask was, when will my perfect peace become fully manifest on this earth and evident for every eye to see.

You ask that question as if you expect me to do something about it. Believe me, I have already finished my work and won the victory. There is nothing left for me to do about it. Creation is not waiting for me, it is waiting for the revealing of my sons in all my power and perfection. You are one of my sons, and I have given you my word of reconciliation. You go, speak my word. Set creation free from futility!

Yes, you have preached my good news to my creation, expecting things to improve. Don't be anxious when things seem to get worse. My word never returns to me fruitless. It always accomplishes all for which I sent it. But have you noticed, you have changed! You are the first of my creation to be set free from futility!

Each in his proper order, my son. My firstborn Son, Jesus the Christ, is your pattern. You are set free from futility at his presence in you, by his life flowing through you. But don't forget, his is a many-membered body. Other members are still in the process of entering in. Soon, every member of Christ's body will be walking fully in his kingdom, free from futility, perfect in unity in him. At that time my creation shall recognize your voice, for it is my voice in you. All authority, rule, and power shall reside in you on earth, as it is in me in the heavenlies.

Yes it is. In a sense, all my creation will get "resurrection bodies" then, for every particle of creation will be transformed to erase every aspect of the curse. Consider for example the changes required just to transform my animals back to their original vegetarian diet!

You shall see it with your own eyes. However, I cannot tell you how soon. It does not wait for me, but for you my sons, maturing into the many-membered body of Jesus the Christ.

Ah... what a joy it is to rest and delight in your completed works, my Lord Jesus Christ! Thank you for giving me the eyes to see your glory and appreciate your great wisdom and beauty in all that you have made.

Thank you, Lord. I am familiar with the first few chapters of Genesis, but I would love to learn more.

Do you mean the teaching that there were millions of years between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2? Or do you mean the teaching that your six days of creation were actually six ages of a few million years each?

I'm sorry, Lord, that I too have entertained those doctrines. I did not know that they were so bad. I just assumed that since you are all-wise, all-knowing, and almighty, you could just as easily create over many ages of time, controlling and guiding the evolution process. That seemed so logical, since it explained why the earth seems so old, and why we find so many fossils of old dinosaurs and other prehistoric life from earlier ages. Please forgive me, Lord. Show me how that logic is wrong.

Oh, my Lord, I can hardly imagine! It must have been perfect and beautiful beyond any comparison.

None before the first sin?

Your joy in my Sabbath Rest is one thing, my son, but your appreciation for the six days of creation is quite another. I would teach you more of creation, for it is the foundation upon which your perspective of the present is built.

First, I will allow no compromise with the godless doctrines requiring millions of years for the earth to reach its present state.

Both. They are both compromises with the false doctrine of life evolving by time and natural laws. This doctrine denies the creative power of my eternal life in my word, and my intimate relationship with my creation. Thus it denies the good news of my Plan of the Ages.

Things only seem old because you believed a false science that sets dates by personal biases and beliefs rather than demonstrable facts. You cannot judge the vigorousness or vitality of the past by the laziness of the present! The word of my creative power is intensely vital. Everything I spoke sprang into being at the instant of my command. You should rather wonder that I took so long! I'll tell you why; as I sang out my creative word, the sheer joy of my work so filled me and my angels that we paused each day to enjoy what I had created. I took just six days to create. Each day then was 32 of your hours long. Most of that time I was just lavishing my love upon my creatures. I am intimately involved with my creation! I called it all very good. So how good is that?

Yes, and so it shall be again, as I wrap up the age of sin and fulfill my purposes for time. You mentioned old fossils of prehistoric life. Most of them date only from the Flood, and none date from before Adam's first sin.

Death is a result of sin. Before sin there was no death – not even a sparrow fell to the ground. Death before sin denies both the vital power of my eternal life in my creation, and the gospel of my resurrection victory over death and sin. Be thankful for death, my son; it is my gift to a sinful world, given out of my great love.

Thankful for death? Death is a gift of your love? That is like being thankful for discipline and suffering, I suppose, but it still seems kind of harsh.

Well, it's easy to say, "I'm thankful," but my heart still mourns over the suffering and death in the world, and longs for the fulfillment of your promise to cleanse the world by fire so we can inhabit your new heavens and new earth, where righteousness dwells.

What kind of good came out of the Flood, Lord?

But Lord, I don't even like to fight your wild beasts! I'm looking forward to your kingdom, where all wild animals are again in proper submission, in peace and righteousness, where the lion will lie down with the lamb and will eat grass like the ox, and "they will not hurt nor destroy in all your holy mountain."

Only because you do not yet have the vision for what I am doing. Had I not allowed sin, and had I not enforced its fruit of suffering and death in the physical realm (as I am also doing in the spiritual realms with Lucifer's first sin) then my physical body would never have had a chance to be perfected in me, and you would have had a purposeless existence. Sin, suffering, futility, and death are my tools to bring all my creation into oneness with me. How can you love me – in my justice, mercy, grace, and wrath against evil – without seeing wickedness? How can you appreciate my Plan of the Ages without seeing satan's alternative?

I am glad that you mourn over sin, suffering, and death. It shows that you have my heart. But you can thank me even as you mourn, for the joy that is set before you as my Plan of the Ages reaches its conclusion. I, too, mourn for my world – for example, at the time of Noah when I had to destroy all flesh except that in the Ark. But even the Flood accomplished much good, for it reveals parts of my beauty and glory that could not otherwise be seen.

For example, before the Flood the seasons were mild, with even temperatures all over the globe, due to the moisture canopy covering the earth. There was no rain or snow, wind or hail. Even the animals were mild, without fear of man. So, think of my power, majesty, and glory which you experience in one of my mighty winter storms. Think of my beauty and wisdom that you see from a peak in my rugged mountains. Think of your exhilaration of victory when you have subdued and taken dominion over one of my fierce wild beasts. None of that was possible before the Flood.

And it is right that you should, for it is time. But now you receive my kingdom as a victor, an overcomer, rather than as an ignorant babe. Adam first received my blessings as a naïve little child. But he is now mature in you my sons. You receive my blessings in the fullness of my victory of the ages, the triumph of my righteousness within you, my brothers.

Father, what about that fellow I witnessed to the other day, who was so insistent upon the absolute free will of each individual to choose or reject your salvation? I shared with him what you had told me about your grace being irresistible (from our lesson on discerning the body). Then I shared about what I learned in our lesson on spiritual warfare, that a sinner's soul is filled with the spirit of antichrist, that his deeds are inspired by his father the devil, and that he is dead in sin and unable to make good choices until your Holy Spirit quickens him. Was I wrong in what I told him?

But aren't you perfectly free to do whatever you will?

Well, now that I think about it, no. Your will is not free to want to do evil, or to go back on your word, or in fact to do anything not in perfect accord with your nature and character.

I am very thankful for that truth, my Father, and I trust you to keep bounds on my will so that it always remains true. But what about the sinner?

Now, wait a minute, Father! This is beginning to sound like everyone is just a robot to your sovereign will, and that nobody else has any free will at all!

You're talking about the body again, Father! What about the sinner? He is not a part of the body of Christ. In fact his fingers certainly can do things against the body, and they do! His fingers can even pull the trigger and kill other members of the body, or even himself!

You were right, my son. That was a blessing to him that he was able to receive. But I have more to teach you on that subject. Be careful whom you share this with, for unless people are prepared with a foundation of faith like I gave you in Volume 1, they may be unable to accept this truth. Free will, or in a more basic sense, freedom itself, is what you would call a paradox, a mystery. You were created in my image, and you cannot understand free will until you see it from my perspective. You are exactly as free as I am, no more, no less.

Yes, I am. So are you and every other person on this earth. But look a little deeper; is my will itself totally free?

Correct. I don't have a perfectly free will. My will is bound by my nature and character, as well as by my word. I can do whatever I will, but I cannot will anything that is not right. You are of me, so you are the same.

You appreciate my bounds on your will, but have I lost control over the sinner's will? Do you deny that I am absolutely sovereign over every detail of his being? His nature is sin. Nothing can operate apart from its nature.

My sons are of me, extensions of myself, in a sense, a part of myself. Can the finger do something that the head does not will or that the rest of the body is not involved in?

My son, have you forgotten? All springs from me and all returns unto me, even the "sinner." From your limited perspective you do have a free will. You have much to grow into, and I give you your choice of what to learn next, and how hard the lesson will be! How much free will did Jonah have when I sent him to Nineveh? How much free will did Saul have on his way persecute Christians in Damascus? You see, from my perspective you have no free will at all. Every step is determined according to my eternal decree – my Plan of the Ages. I see all from eternity, and in eternity nothing is left undone; all is perfect and complete.

But Father, that seems to do away with the whole concept of sin! If there actually is no free will, then there can be no sin and no just punishment for sin, for it is all from you and returning to you anyway.

What then is sin, if there is no free will for the sinner to express his nature?

So the sinner's rebellion and hardness of heart, as expressions of his "free" will, are sin. But your sovereign law is on a higher plane. Your law always keeps him in bondage until he bows to you to acknowledge your lordship.

Is that then all there is to free will? We have a false sense of it while we are sinners, but we give it up when we receive our salvation, and become bonded to your will: "bondsmen to righteousness" as it says in Romans 6. Is that all there is? It sounds like real freedom doesn't even exist at all!

Wow! Thank you, Father! Now I know why Jesus told us to, "Seek first your kingdom and your righteousness." I think I am beginning to get it. I am just as free as you are, because I am in you, and (in a sense) part of you and part of what you are doing. So my free will is actually your own free will, expressed in me; your own life being lived out through me.

So our freedom stems from being "in you" and doing only what we were created to do?

"Liberty: freedom under law to do right."  
Thank you for helping me to understand!

Not so, my son. If there were no sin, why would I hate it so? Surely you have sensed my violent and awesome hatred of evil! Sin is not of me, nor will it return to me. Yet I use it as a tool to accomplish my purposes.

As I said before, from the sinner's perspective, he has infinite freedom to express his sinful nature, though I am always ahead of him with my gifts of suffering, futility, and death. He can do nothing which is beyond me. He feels free, but is actually bound to his flesh nature. Every path he chooses leads to my judgment, discipline, wisdom, and righteousness.

Yes. Consider for example my law of gravity. Does your free will to jump from heights keep you from injury when you land? Or my law of tithing; from your perspective, you are free to choose to tithe or not. But my law still holds for those who will not tithe: the tithe is then claimed by the devourer as it comes due, until a sinner learns the wisdom of my ways.

No. First, it is not *your* salvation; it is mine. It is from me, through me, and for me. Second, the sinner is in bondage to the law because his flesh nature cannot keep it, but you have my nature. You are free from the law because my nature in you keeps it perfectly. You speak of it as bondage to my will, but there is actually no greater freedom, for you are just as free as I am to do all that is right – my righteousness.

Yes. A good example is that of your typewriter exercising its freedom to swim. It was not made to swim! If it tried, it would only end up on the bottom of the lake, rusting. You were created to exist in me; all those not yet in me are on the bottom of the lake, rusting, until I lift them out, clean off the rust, and put them to use... typing my Gospel of the Kingdom!

That's right, and there is no greater liberty! Just as I am infinite, so there is an infinite number and variety of ways which I, within my many-membered body, express my great love (all of myself) to my maturing creation.



Father, that last lesson on man's "free will" frankly left me a little confused. How do the sinner's "illusion" of free will and the saint's real freedom in you match your scriptural teaching on predestination, such as I read in Ephesians 1:3-12 and Romans 8:28-30? Those passages almost seem to imply that it is the sinner who is free to do whatever he pleases, but those chosen in Christ before the creation of the world have no choice except to become conformed to the image of Christ. I know, you said that there is no greater liberty than being in you and doing what we were created to do, but Romans 6:16-22 insists that we are either slaves of sin or slaves of righteousness. From that, it seems like even the saint's freedom in Christ is an illusion – in competition with your infinite sovereignty. It doesn't seem much like freedom to me.

Wow! Thank you for that illustration. I didn't realize that the sinner was living in such death! When you call him to repentance, is that like taking him off the paper and out of the file folder?

So when you sent Jesus to earth, it was like flattening him down to fit on a piece of paper, so we flat-worlders could recognize him. But unlike us, He still kept his focus on you in your three-dimensional life. What happens then, Father? And how is the sinner changed into your multi-dimensional life form?

Most of you've said so far involves what you do. Is there nothing for man to do except meditate on your word and be transformed?

Yes, my son, it is a paradox. Mankind is not under an illusion of free will; he is actually free, but within bounds, as in a maze where all paths lead to the prize. He can do anything he pleases, but only according to his nature and within the boundaries of my law, in harmony with my plan and purposes for him. Consider him as on a two-dimensional piece of paper; he can go anywhere he wants on that paper, but I've got the paper in my file folder, and since he lives in only two dimensions he can't even get off the paper, much less out of the file folder! In fact, his soul is dead to my form of "three-dimensional" life. He doesn't want to get off the paper, nor can he comprehend that anything off the paper even exists. The paper is the full framework of his life, and the file folder is my law, under which he is bound but which he can neither see nor comprehend.

Just as you protect important files by guarding your filing cabinet from fire, dirt, flood, and thieves, I continually take care of my precious ones. But none can respond until I open up his folder and allow him to behold the light of my "three-dimensional" life: Christ Jesus. That is my call, and it is irresistible. No one can long remain satisfied with a flat world once they have caught a glimpse of the beauty and glory of my multi-dimensional life form! I call, but I do not force. I lead. The power of my call is found in the beauty of my love and grace.

His paper was gibberish. The wanderer's life was meaningless. When I remove his folder from the file cabinet I begin to erase all his gibberish and write anew. In time I have a grand manuscript: my word revealed to his heart. As he reads and receives what I write, he begins to know me, to love me, and to long after me. When he is ready, no longer needing the discipline of my law, I remove the paper from his file folder and "publish" it. He is transformed into my life form by meditating on my word. So he carries my life to others.

Enjoy it! Trust me! Love me! Be thankful!  
Your response to what I do is my delight!

Father, please share more with me regarding bondage, and how it relates to your lessons on freedom and the free will.

Then when you put the locomotive back on track, it becomes free within the boundaries of your law to go anywhere in the whole country.

True! It seems like the fun places, like skiing, swimming, and games, don't have any track.

No, but we were, weren't we? Doesn't the analogy break down there?

Are you implying that all pleasure (such as skiing, swimming, sports, and games) is wrong?

And you are the master... Do you often lay track for sightseeing in the mountains?

What about those who move contrary to your Spirit, according to their own self-will, led by their selfish ambitions and desires?

Yes, my son, it is my delight to do so, for the subject of bondage is so easily misunderstood. It can be compared to a heavy locomotive which has gotten off the track. It may think it is free to roam the hills and hinterlands, but in reality it only sinks deeper into the mud.

Look at it from the locomotive's perspective. It may see the track as bondage, providing just a limited number of destinations, and all those looking more like work rather than fun.

But what the was locomotive created for? Was it made to ski or swim or play games?

The locomotive can only be happy by doing exactly what it was made to do. A person may think he is happy while madly pursuing the world's pleasures, but he has no real peace or joy until with his whole heart he submits to me and to my plans and purposes for his life.

Not at all. Nothing is wrong in and of itself. Anything can be either a blessing or a trap; it is the heart motivation that determines which. If the master of the locomotive desires it to wander among the hills, he has the track laid there, and many are blessed as they appreciate the scenic wonders of my mountains. Only when the locomotive tries to rebel against its master's wishes does it get into trouble.

I do. My Spirit blows freely throughout all my creation, so that each of my precious ones can experience all kinds of pleasures in me. That is freedom, and it has no sorrow with it. As you move by my Spirit, you are protected, guided, given wisdom, and assisted in worship. Even work in and unto me is pleasure!

They are truly in bondage, for the very things they think will give pleasure are an obsession from which they cannot escape. Their lives become unbalanced, characterized by constant striving after futility. Pray for them to see their bondage and the futility of their ways and to seek after me with all their hearts, to get back on my "track" of freedom and true joy!

Father, you have taught me about the beauty and perfection of your oneness. You have taught me how to relate to you based on my awareness and faith in your many names, as summarized in your one all-inclusive name, the Lord Jesus Christ. But what about the doctrine of the Trinity? Some with whom I share your teaching on your oneness claim that it denies the doctrine of the Trinity. They say that you are actually three distinct and self-aware persons within one Godhead.

But Father, are you saying that all doctrines are wrong?!

Does that mean that I should throw out all doctrines and just wait on you?

And as the children mature, do they then have to un-learn those doctrines?

So I should believe the doctrines that do give you glory and agree with your word so far as I understand it now, but should always remain flexible to be led further by your Spirit?

Be at peace, my son. Do not fall into the trap of being anxious about doctrine. No doctrine is truth; I am the truth. I want you to never be guilty of taking your stand on doctrines or visions or anything that you know with your mind or feel with your emotions. *I am always bigger than that.* You speak of doctrines as statements of man's current understanding of myself in a given area. But sound doctrine is actually a revelation of myself and my living word to you, which is continually growing in your awareness and understanding. As soon as man tries to enshrine me in a simplified creed or written doctrine, no matter how profound, then it tends to block further growth.

No, but all are incomplete, inadequate, falling short of my glory, wisdom, and power.

Be careful! You do not throw out the baby who is not yet mature enough to pronounce his words correctly. Give him time to grow. Many doctrines are good, as far as they go. They help the babes begin to comprehend me on a simple, earthly level, and they teach the children to fear and respect my infinite power, the glory of my righteousness, and the beauty of my wisdom, that they may learn to come to me and learn of me. Doctrines that do that must be carefully taught to the children.

Not at all. As they mature they learn to know my voice and follow me, so they no longer need the crutch of doctrines to hold them up. When you were a child you learned to honor and obey me in your earthly parents, so that you could ultimately leave them to honor and obey me directly as an adult. But you do not dishonor and disobey your earthly parents when you learn a higher truth! Truth is always growing in your awareness, but that does not negate the simpler truth that you started with.

Precisely! Believe all things that harmonize with what I have shown you so far, but also bear all things, hope all things, and endure all things. No matter what or how much you know right now, *I am always bigger than that.*

How then should I relate to, for example, this doctrine of the Trinity?

It is true as far as it goes. It gives me glory and correctly portrays some aspects of my multi-faceted nature and character. It helps children to begin to understand a little of the awesome mystery of my being; I am indeed perfectly, eternally one God, yet I am also perfectly and eternally distinct self-aware persons whom I have revealed as three: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, or the Lord, Jesus, Christ.

But you are bigger than that?

Oh yes! You're not capable of understanding how much greater. You cannot emphasize my oneness enough, for you have not yet grown up into oneness with me as I am. But neither can you comprehend the self-awareness and individuality of my three (or seven) aspects. I leave it to you as a mystery, to believe and to grow into for ages to come.

Will you please give an example to help me understand it?

I gave godly marriage to you as an example. The husband represents the Father, as he gives the law. The wife represents the Son as she carries out the law in the day-to-day operation of the household. The spirit of love binding the marriage together represents the Holy Spirit, sent from the Father through the Son to lead the whole family to fulfill its purpose. I see the marriage unit as one in a deeper way than you can comprehend. Remember that I created Adam to be in my image, as an earthly picture of all that I am in Spirit. Adam is one person, yet I separated him into male and female and gave him children. Sin divided him into many contending individuals. But do not fear. In my second Adam, Jesus, all is being restored. Your wedding with Jesus is soon; at that time you will begin to comprehend my plan for Adam and Eve before they sinned.

Begin to comprehend? Don't I even begin to comprehend it now?

How can you comprehend what I have not yet restored? In all your doctrines you think you know much. Be cautious that pride does not enter in! All your knowledge is but the infant stirrings of the vastness of the mind of Christ. Trust me wholly, and humbly learn of me. My Spirit continues to lead you into all truth, but it is enough now for you to be growing toward your marriage union in Jesus.

Father, thank you for our relationship. What joy it is to dwell in your presence, learning of your nature and character, your ways, your wisdom, and your righteousness!

Well, yes, of course Lord. But I am not of the world, I am of you – you said so yourself! So I don't need to be concerned about the world, do I?

I thought that I was doing that, Lord. Reality is what your word says, regardless of what I see with my eyes. I am who you say that I am; even when the flesh tries to rise up and claim my attention, I just reckon it dead and walk on with you.

Are you talking about spiritual warfare, Lord? You've been training me to discern the spirits, and to exercise your authority over any evil spirits that I discern.

Isn't that what I am doing, Lord, when I look at everything from your kingdom perspective of righteousness, and live my daily life as if your righteousness were already manifest on the earth?

[Sigh...] Yes, Lord. I am willing, my Father. Please teach me.

Oh. You're right, Lord. I guess that is what I've been doing. Do you mean that you want me to start getting involved in politics, Lord?!

I also delight in dwelling in and with you, my son. Our relationship is a continual treasure to me. But are you aware that in the physical you still dwell in a world filled with sin?

That is wrong. I have not called you to a life of escape or seclusion, as with the monks in their monasteries who thought they could be free from sin by hiding from it. I have called you to face reality, but only by my spirit and from my kingdom viewpoint of righteousness.

... as I have taught you. Good. But now it is time to grow up in my kingdom. It is childish to face a difficult reality by pretending that it doesn't exist. I have not yet taken you out of the world, nor have I yet abolished the world's sin and its curse. I have a purpose in leaving you here side by side with sin. I will not take away the sin until it has fulfilled its purpose.

Let's call it practical warfare, or better yet, practical faith. Spiritual warfare accomplishes much, but my goal is to manifest my kingdom in the physical as well as in the spirit.

No. It is a start, but now I ask more of you. You've been operating under the assumption that eventually I would make an end of sin and fully establish my kingdom upon the earth, and then your faith would be sight and you would live happily ever after. That is the faith of a child. It is time to grow up, my son.

Let's start with worldly government. You see many things wrong with your government, and you long for me to take over and set up my perfect government of peace and justice. So you stay out of "filthy politics" and just pray, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done."

My son, you are my tool to accomplish my purposes. The kingdom doesn't just "happen someday." It is birthed in the hearts of my sons, and by your obedience it grows from transformed individuals, through transformed families, organizations, and nations, into a transformed world. Politics is a part of that.

Oh, Father, my heart is sinking. I hate politics, and government in general seems just too wicked to be of any good use to the kingdom. But Father, can't you just do away with it all in one grand sweep by your great power and glory in Christ Jesus, and begin your rule of righteousness, without my needing to become involved in worldly politics?

No, my Lord. I must confess, I am not at all ready to rule your world with you. I guess I was hoping you would do it through your saints without us having to go through any training for it, but I see now that I was naïve. Please forgive me. You are my lord, and if you want me to get into politics in order to train me to rule with you, I am willing.

Only your body is any different, my Lord. All human organizations, even a lot of "church" organizations I know of, seem to exist only to perpetuate themselves.

Is the purpose of true government to serve and protect it's people?

What about other functions of government, such as setting up rules for commerce and transportation, public works such as power plants, bridges, and highways, controlling our economy, printing our money, enforcing the protection of the environment, providing for the education of our children, taking care of the poor, disabled, and elderly...

Should I do away with that which I allowed for your good? The time indeed will come when all the kingdoms of this world will become the kingdom of my Christ, in power and glory that you cannot now even imagine. But who will then rule? You speak about my kingdom as if you would sit by and watch it happen. I tell you no. You are my body, my vessel to flow my spirit to my world. I rule through you, and it is time. Are you ready?

Good. I have not yet asked you to become a politician, but you must be willing, and even eager to learn my wisdom concerning politics. Government is very wicked, but no more so than any human organization. Outwardly it's goals are to serve and protect it's people. But its ulterior goals are to serve and protect itself. What human organization is any different?

Learn my wisdom concerning government. Know what true government is for and how it works, so that you may recognize the lie and be able to deal with it correctly when it pops up. When you've learned that, then I'm ready to establish my kingdom through you.

No. I am your protection, and I call you to serve one another. True government exists to provide an environment which encourages the righteous to flourish, and to punish the wicked. If a nation is wicked, I give it a harsh and tyrannical government, which becomes an oppressive burden to all it's people. If those people then repent and turn away from their sin, I give them a less oppressive government. If they wholeheartedly seek me, my wisdom, and my righteousness, I remove all burden of government. Thus my kingdom is born.

The need for government to do those things exists only because of sin. Selfish desires are never content. The result is a heavy burden of regulations, taxation, and bureaucracy! I am your provision, my wisdom in my word is your education, I care for my world and my sons. I give you government as a discipline until you are able to grow up in my kingdom.

From that last lesson on government, Father, I'm wondering how I should act. First you seemed to say that I needed to face reality and start acting responsibly toward government, even though it is evil. But then you turned around and said that almost everything that government does is wrong, and the only things right are the punishment of the wicked and the encouraging of an environment for the righteous to flourish. How does that all fit together?

I'm sorry, Father, but so far that only sounds like a good theory. How does it work out in the "real" world, the world of actions and their consequences?

Father, please help me understand by giving some examples of how you are accomplishing all this through us. Show me how to vote, or if you do lead me to become a politician, show me what sort of laws to support and what sort to vote against or try to block in congress. And show me how I should respond to our present evil government's laws and bureaucracy.

It's time for some kingdom basics, my son. I am absolutely sovereign. Nothing, no, not one thing, happens by chance or is out of my control. You will not receive my kingdom of peace and righteousness until you learn my wisdom through the government of injustice and oppression under which I have placed you. You do not deal with sin by ignoring it and dwelling in future hope; you deal with it by taking dominion, by my authority in you. I have called you to be a light to a dark world, spice to a bland existence, truth and wisdom to a world of deception. You reflect my life, my ways, my nature and character to a world that cannot see me except in and through you.

It is not theory; this is my Plan of the Ages! You shall take dominion over government, over education, over the financial realm, over transportation, over commerce, over law, over medicine, over the environment, yes even over the whole earth, for I shall do it through you. I am your lord. You are willing, with a mind set free from past conditionings of right and wrong and "how things are done." I do things differently, and nothing is really right until all is restored. Follow me, and trust me. I shall accomplish all things through you.

**Government.** I have many of my saints there now who are continually taking their stand for righteousness with every vote. Do not allow yourself to be deceived into the thinking of the world, nor give in to the lusts of the flesh, but make every vote count for the kingdom. Vote for strong government in punishing the wicked and encouraging the righteous, and vote against government involvement in all else. Trust me: as government moves out of each usurped realm, my ways take over.

**Law.** My commandments are the foundation of all law; know and love my commandments, so that you can vote against anything not in perfect harmony with them. When you make laws for your children or your organizations, be sure they are based on the right foundation. Replace laws based on fear or greed with laws based on love, self-control, and hatred of evil.

**Welfare.** Through my body I take care of my needy precious ones. All who cannot receive from me should go without. Government “welfare” is theft from those I have blessed to give to those I have cursed; it is a tool of satan to bring my precious ones under bondage and to remove the wicked from under my hand of discipline. Of what value is a handout without compassion, or a gift without love? For those on welfare now I say, repent and build a right relationship with me. I will then bless and care for you, and lead you out of the welfare trap.

**Education.** I blessed public education when it was run by those who feared me. They have failed me by allowing the godless to take over, so I have removed my blessing. The naïve think they can teach facts without faith, but those now in charge of public education are deliberately teaching their own faith. Do not be deceived; it is a faith which denies truth and thus serves satan’s purposes. Therefore I am removing my precious ones from public schools and restoring my ideal of education directly under parental authority, in homes or Christ-centered private schools. Remember that the primary purpose of education is to teach my character (virtue and morals) and to impart a deep hunger for learning my wisdom. Anyone schooled in these will not suffer lack.

**Financial realm.** Money manipulator’s goals are to enslave by attaching a false value to their commodity (money) and their services (promoting things that make it easy to go into debt but hard to get out). Money has no value except in the confidence which I give for it; it is no more than a convenient way to exchange products and services. I am judging the entire financial realm, together with its enslavement and deception. To avoid being caught in my judgment, get out of debt, spend for only that which I lead you to get, sell all that I show you is not needed, and do not put any faith in savings, investments, or financial institutions. Learn to barter. Place equitable values upon the goods and services which I allow to flow through you. Deal in equity and righteousness always, and trust in my provision as I lead you step by step into my kingdom economics.

**Transportation.** Is your vehicle a means to an end, or an end itself? Differentiate between needs and wants; don’t mortgage your life for convenience that goes beyond your real need. Cars and trucks have become more vanity and luxury than function, and their expense in time and resources is higher than you realize. Taking the bus, walking, or bicycling are also good options, if you can arrange your job and shopping locations to be closer to home. An inexpensive used vehicle that is committed to me is more blessing than the finest new car or truck purchased in pride or selfish desire.

**Commerce.** Many of my saints have worked within the realm of big business, and know the bondage of submission to a hierarchy of evil supervisors and managers. I have come to set you free. Learn to labor only as unto me, and do only that which is right in my sight, regardless of a manager’s demands. In my time and my way I will deliver you from all unjust business environments. Then I will place you in joyfully productive businesses where every employee is treated with equity, and where each person is led by me, each working with the unique individual skills which I have bestowed, in loving harmony together.

**Medicine.** Many false claims are believed by those unwilling to trust me to be their healer. I have used medicine and doctors as my tools during the age of sin, but my precious ones have abused me by giving their first trust to them, then asking me to bless it. There are no accidents in my kingdom. There is no disease beyond my control. Learn to trust me first in all things, and seek for my wisdom as well as my guidance; I will make it clear to you the means I choose to effect your healing, as you gain my wisdom on why I allowed your illness in the first place. I desire you to be perfectly healthy in my kingdom, but I do not entrust perfect health to those who have no concern for my wisdom and my ways.

**Conclusion.** You have finished Volume 2. You have learned many basic kingdom principles, and have grown to appreciate my wisdom in them. Now dwell with me! Allow my ways to become your nature and your life.



# *The Gospel of the Kingdom*

*Volume 3*

**Dwelling  
in the  
Kingdom**



Father, what really is man? Why were we created and what is our nature and purpose?

Oh, my Father and my God, great king of all the universe, how can I answer that question?! You are so great, so awesome, so far beyond my understanding – you have all power and all authority in your hands; you are all loving, all seeing, all hearing, and all knowing; you transcend time and space, existing in all places at all times without conflict or contradiction; you have all wisdom and knowledge; you are the source of all things; all things were perfect when they came from your hands; you are absolutely sovereign – not a single thing in all your creation occurs without your permission. I am not capable of comprehending fully even the smallest part of you, and the more I learn about your wisdom and your ways the smaller I feel and the more I realize I have yet to learn. You are transcendent; holy, holy, holy beyond our comprehension. Yet you are immanent; ever-present in your incredible, infinite love. Your nature and character is all that is good and right and all that is joyful and wonderful. I feel that I have just begun to partake of it. As to your purpose – who am I to tell you? You are the author of all purpose, for all things have their beginning and end in you.

Truly, Oh God, you are worthy of all honor and praise. Only you could accomplish such wondrous plans and purposes in and through such weak and foolish vessels. I can conceive of no higher joy than to be a steadfast stone in your dwelling place and a faithful soldier in your army. Do with, in, and through me as you please, Oh God my Father, for this is why I was created, with it I am content, and in it I delight. I place all my trust in your infinite love and faithfulness to make good use of me for your kingdom's sake.

My son, I love to answer that question, at deeper and deeper levels as you grow in me. But before I answer, I have a question for you, for how I answer depends upon you. Tell me. Who am I? What is my nature and purpose?

I am pleased with your answer, my son, for in it I see that you have learned how to revere me in the right way, humbling yourself before me. No one can learn his own nature and purpose if his relationship with me is based on selfish pride or fear of punishment.

You and your spouse together are one man, Adam. I created you in my image to be my representative, to rule over my creation and to have dominion over all the works of my hand. To empower you for this task I breathed into you the fullness of my Spirit, my own life in and through you. I allowed you to turn away from me for a time, in your ignorance and naïveté, to prove for all time by the futility, bondage, and suffering of your choice that my way is the only right way. That issue is now settled, and it is time for me to complete and perfect all that I have begun in you.

So here is my answer for now. You are of me. Your nature and character, though at one time fallen, are now redeemed and entirely of me. As you humble yourself before my majesty, I lift you up to place you within that majesty, not for yourself, but for myself, for my glory is displayed in you. Consider a strong castle, a fit dwelling for a mighty monarch to display his honor and authority. You are my castle, my dwelling place; my glory shines through you. Consider a mighty army, in perfect submission to its commander-in-chief. You are my army, fit to accomplish my will. No longer just an individual building stone or lone soldier, you are bonded into one with all my saints from all the ages past and present. Together you form a glorious temple for me to live with you. Jesus Christ my firstborn is the foundation stone and the Captain of my Host. In this my temple I establish my throne, and in this my army I carry out my plans and purposes for all ages.

Oh my Father, it is such joy and peace to dwell with you, growing in your nature and character, and learning your ways. How could anyone not want to believe in you?

You're right, Father. Now that I think about it, before you opened my eyes to how wonderful you are and I fell in love with you, I didn't want to believe in you, either.

Oh. I guess that's why those who don't know you are so fervent in their idol worship. But Father, if everyone really does want to believe in you, why do some harden their hearts so much that you have to cast them into hell? I thought their rebellious, self-nature was so bad that they couldn't seek after you.

Father, please define what you mean when you say "by faith." How do we know when something is "by faith" or not?

What about those who want to believe in you and really want to die to their self-nature, but are still struggling with it, unable to overcome the temptations of the flesh?

Pardon me, Father, but it sounds like you said we must be perfect before we can be perfect!

It sounds like I need more than just your definition of faith. What is your definition of "overcomer," and how is it tied in with faith?

Your joy is my delight, my son. You put your trust in me, not because you experience joy and peace with me, but because I reveal to you my goodness, faithfulness, and love.

Not so, my son. Everyone, even the most evil criminal, wants to believe. From creation I put in man a deep-rooted desire to seek after me. Everyone has a religion of some sort. Man is in my image, created to walk with me and always reflect my glory back to me. Separate from me he will always feel incomplete and unfulfilled, and his innermost being will yearn for truth, wisdom, peace, purpose, and righteousness.

Careful, my son. I do not send anyone to hell for having a hard, rebellious heart – everyone starts out that way! I honor the choice of those who, knowing the truth, still choose hell. Yet I much prefer to save from hell any who repent. But that self-nature must die. Hell is death by fire of the self-nature for all who have no faith, and thus could not receive by faith the death of their self-nature in me at Golgotha.

Faith becomes evident by an open and single-minded heart to receive all that I am, all that I speak, my nature – yes, my very life. There is only one faith. Those who want to believe in me but also want to live by their self-nature, are double-minded, and do not yet have faith.

They are children, of little faith. They must grow up in me to become overcomers, before I will allow them to dwell in my kingdom with me, sharing my glory in my perfection.

Not at all. I said you must by faith receive my perfection in order to be perfect.

An overcomer is one who stands firm in my faithfulness, in every situation. Anyone who looks to adverse circumstances and doubts or fears is still a child, of little faith. To be an overcomer, you must have my gift of faith, which I give to all who seek me with fervent, undivided hearts. Faith believes and lives by my word, even when physical senses deny it.

But Father, what about all those who fervently try to seek after you, but have divided hearts? I see so many around me who seem to be true, sincere believers, yet who can't overcome the lusts of the flesh in their daily lives. They do have faith that they will overcome, someday, but not in this life, now.

Not yet believers, or even Christians? That is a pretty hard saying, Lord. They call themselves Christians, and they act like Christians most of the time. They love you and love your word and try their best to understand it and follow it. I can understand your calling them sinners, seekers, Christ-followers, or children of little faith. I can even understand your not calling them saints or overcomers. But Lord, it really challenges me that you don't even call them Christians or believers!

But Lord, if you haven't yet given them your gifts of love and faith, their spirits are dead, and the best that they can do is love with their human self-love and believe with their minds. I guess that's why they are so busy playing the religious games, hoping something works. Don't you honor that by quickening their spirits and giving them the gift of your spirit?

And what of those you do not call? They do believe in you, Lord. That's why they seek you! Doesn't their belief count for anything?

I am very sad for them, my Father. What joy and peace they are missing by not knowing you and trusting fully in your faithfulness!

Thank you Oh my Father, for your infinite mercy and faithfulness to your creation!

Remember what I said at the beginning? You have faith, because I have revealed to you my faithfulness and love. I have not yet revealed myself to them, so they do not yet have faith. They are not yet saints, believers, Christians, overcomers; instead they are sinners, seekers, Christ-followers, or children of little faith.

Faith is far deeper than a mental acceptance of my promise and an intellectual belief in my word. Human love cannot respond except from selfish motives. Those whose spirits are dead cannot know the true life of my Spirit. A sinner seeking me, following me according to the understanding of his mind, with little faith for anything but a partial salvation from sin and a fulfillment of my promises "in the sky by and by," is not a true believer. He knows of me but does not know me, nor is he filled with my spirit. His motives for following me are self-centered. You are a Christian, because I am in you through my spirit, and you are in me. Those not filled with my spirit are not of me, no matter how religious they may appear.

I know whom I have chosen for this age; at the right time I do quicken their spirits and reveal myself to them. It is not of him who seeks but of myself who calls according to my purposes in Christ Jesus. Whomever I am calling to be a part of his bride, I grant the gift of yearning wholeheartedly for me. Then as I reveal myself in the fullness of my glory, they are ready to receive my spirit and be made whole.

They seek for me with a divided heart, since the hunger for me that I gave them at creation is perverted by the desires for self-fulfillment, self gratification, and self-preservation. Their belief is a poor substitute for my gift of faith.

Don't be sad for them, my son! Rejoice when they seek me with what they have. Trust my faithfulness even to them, that I will meet with them in my time and way, perhaps even through you, whether in this age, or in ages to come. I have faith enough for all, but each in his own order as my Plan of the Ages unfolds.

Hallelujah, Father! What a joy I am having with you in worship and praise this morning! I bow before you in awe and wonder at your greatness, your sovereignty, your unspeakable glory, and your power, wisdom, and love.

I know, Father, that all authority comes from you, and that kings reign only because you have brought them to the throne. And I know that even wicked kings are under your control, in spite of themselves. But don't they have a kind of sovereignty, also?

But Father, what about an evil ruler who makes laws contrary to your law?

Father, what do you mean when you say, "obey me in him"?

If I do that, then you are my real sovereign, so why do you raise up the king at all? Why not just require that everyone submit only to you?

I gave you that little glimpse of myself this morning because I want to talk to you about sovereignty. You spoke of "my" sovereignty as if there were others to compare it to. But in reality, there is no sovereignty except mine. I open your eyes to see me in a new way today.

Not at all. The word sovereign means ruler, one who makes and enforces the laws by which his people are governed. Satan would like you to believe that earthly kings actually make and enforce laws, for then he might get you to fear and obey them. In reality, I make and enforce all laws – through those whom I have chosen – and I command you to fear and obey only me, even in those whom I appoint. Thus I set you free of all fear of man and give you power to always do only what is right.

Honor, obey, and submit to me in him. I have raised him up and put in his heart to make evil laws as a discipline and judgment for him and all under him. If you obey him blindly you are under my judgment and you learn my wisdom the hard way. If you are careful to only obey me in him, then you are under my discipline, for through suffering you learn my wisdom and thus receive my eternal blessing.

Hear and do only what I am saying through him. His laws either deny or establish my law. Discern each of his laws in the light of my law, and stand firm in my word, doing only what my spirit confirms to you is right.

I don't want robots to serve as slaves in my kingdom. I want mature sons who are trained to discern righteousness, who serve in love, knowing the goodness of my ways. Groaning under the bondage of a wicked ruler is an effective way to foster that hunger for my righteousness! But more than that, I display my wisdom and sovereignty by overruling all evil so that it turns out for good. You do not see it now, but in the ages to come you will recognize my great glory in the sovereign way that I fulfill every promise and turn around all evil for good, without ever violating my law.

It almost sounds like we are robots, anyway, Father. I know that all good flows from you. Are you now implying that even evil is totally under your sovereign hand?

Father, in our lesson on freedom, you said that free will is a paradox, and that the sinner is actually free, but within bounds, as in a maze where all paths lead to the prize. How does the sinner's free will function under your overriding sovereignty?

Father, I know you are bigger than all that, but I haven't yet seen how much bigger. Your sovereignty over evil is still beyond me. Please give me some examples to help me understand.

Thank you, my Father! I bow gladly to your sovereignty in, through, and over all creation. Since you are bigger than all that satan can do to destroy your plan, I know that you certainly are bigger than any circumstance that can happen to me, no matter how insurmountable it may seem. From now on I will make that a motto of mine: in anything that happens, good or bad, I will acknowledge your sovereignty, saying, "God is bigger than that."

I do not originate evil, my son, though I did allow it. It saddened me greatly to do so for I saw its consequences from the first. But I do use evil as a tool to accomplish my purposes.

The sinner has no concept of my sovereignty, and goes blindly on his way seeking whatever he perceives is good. How easy it is for satan to pervert his perception slightly so that his "good" turns out to be the path of death. But even satan is finite, bound by time and place. Only I am infinite, with full view of all times and places from my perspective in eternity. Before the first thought of rebellion and pride entered the mind of Lucifer, I knew it, and my plan was already fully formed. From the very beginning of time it was inevitable that one of my creation would test my ways. I created the road of death, as well as the path of life, to show the tragedy and futility of all other ways in clear comparison to the beauty, goodness, and joy of my ways. Now that his evil ways have proven bad, satan has deceived himself into thinking of every sinner as his tool to retaliate, by destroying my Plan of the Ages and robbing me of my precious ones. He does not know that I am bigger than all that.

Look at Judas. He was inspired by satan to turn against me, yet he only fulfilled my word and furthered my plan of redemption. Then satan inspired him to kill himself, to rob me of the joy of his fellowship. So now he is in hell. I smile sadly to see him telling others there of the futility of going any way but my way. Yes, he was lost from this age, but how many more will come to me in future ages through his witness to my sovereignty! Another example is satan himself, the father of lies and all that is evil. He does not yet understand that all his lies are building up the most powerful case for my truth, and all his wickedness is beautifully contrasting with the glory and goodness of my righteousness. In time, when every wickedness has been tried and allowed to run its natural course of suffering and death, he too will bow to receive my love, finally able to acknowledge the perfection and goodness of all my ways.

Thank you, Father, for putting into my heart the desire to seek first your kingdom and your righteousness! I love your kingdom and I long for it to be finally established on this earth. Please teach me how to cooperate with you in bringing forth your kingdom more speedily.

It sounds like you are enjoying the process so much you don't want to hurry things along.

But Father, what about us? For so many here on earth it is still a heavy labor to enter into your rest. Many of your precious ones still are under a continual burden and struggle for your righteousness while living in this world where the downward pull of sin is so strong.

Father, in my spirit I know that you're right, but sometimes my physical being longs to see some actual evidence in the physical realm. You know that I long to see you face to face, but I also long to see all creation cleansed from sin and set free from futility.

That's it, Father! That is the moment that my heart yearns for! When Jesus shall appear the second time, in power and great glory, how wonderful that day will be! Isn't that when we shall really see you face to face? And isn't that when we shall all be changed, in a moment, out of the body of this death into the body of your glorious resurrection life? And isn't that when creation will be set free from its bondage to futility?

Your desire is my delight, my son. Do not be anxious about my timing, but rejoice that my kingdom has been born within you. You have tended to view my kingdom as a victory to be won or a goal to be achieved. In reality it is an unfolding process in which I take great delight throughout the ages. Think of the parable of the mustard seed. My kingdom is the tiny, growing seed as well as the mature tree of life. Building the foundations of my kingdom are as important as placing the final capstone.

I love the process, for within the foundations I can see the capstone, just as the gardener can see the perfect flower within each tiny bud.

Be thankful for the heavy labor, the burden and the struggle. That is my discipline, to challenge each one to look up higher. In me there is no struggle. I have already won the victory. My burden is light, a refreshing joy, for it is my love for my precious ones.

The evidence is my gift of faith within you! Take faith, my son! You do see me face to face continually, for the face of my spirit is ever before your spirit, and the face of my body is smiling at you from every saint with whom you fellowship. Take faith for creation as well. The sin that has bound this earth for six ages has finished its job. Now my sons are coming forth, mature and strong, to set creation free.

Jesus has come many times. Those who have the eyes to see him, do. Those who have the heart to receive him, enter my kingdom. I deal with each generation, each individual, anew. With each one I lay the foundation, build the finished structure, and place the capstone of my Holy Spirit upon the top. Will you not allow me time to finish in others what I have finished in you? You are so eager to see the completed city, but I am the master builder, and I am enjoying my craftsmanship in each structure within my city. Be grateful that I delay so long, that my holy city may be all the more glorious. Give me all your anxiousness, and trust me that my timing is always right.



You're right, my Father. It is your city. I do want you to take whatever time is necessary to complete it in your perfection. I realize that if it were up to me, I would hurry the job too fast and miss out on some of the glorious structures you are now completing in these end times. I repent, Lord, of my anxiousness. Please take all the time you want. I know that you are doing a quick work within each of your chosen ones, cutting the time short in righteousness. But I also am grateful for your patience and your longsuffering mercies, as well as the thoroughness of your discipline, toward all who are yet to be saved in this age. By your grace I patiently wait for the visible "second coming" of Jesus, knowing that his coming into my own heart by your Holy Spirit is more significant for me. My heart's cry is still, "Come Quickly, Lord Jesus!" but now I shift my focus to, "Come Quickly, Lord Jesus, within the hearts and lives of each of your precious ones as you have come in me!"

But Father, you didn't say when he actually became a Christian?

Thank you, my Father! What a wonderful illustration of your work in your chosen ones! I appreciate your teaching me patience to wait upon you and to trust in your perfect time as well as your perfect ways. I do now trust you for each of your chosen precious ones, for I know that you are perfecting each one in your time. Let your sons be matured in faith! We do trust you for that time when faith shall become sight and all creation is restored.

I forgive you, my son. Now, learn about my process that you may appreciate the integrity of my buildings. Each individual is different, and with each I work differently to best match his or her abilities to learn. However, there is a general process I use, similar to building a house, which applies to all. I start with the **Foundation**: every son is birthed in my own image, in innocence and immaturity but with a heart to grow and learn. Then I lay the **Sub floor**: I allow each one to fall into sin, that they may see the evil of it and recognize their need for my law and my righteousness. **Walls** often take more time, as each son learns the boundaries of my law and the consequences of selfish choices. But soon the **Roof** is put into place, when I teach my son to cry out to me for help in times of trouble, and know that I am his only covering. Then finally the **Detail Finishing** can begin, as my son learns about me, step by step discovering the difference between the lie and my truth. Here he begins to appreciate the goodness of my ways and long for my righteousness, as I beautify his life with my nature and character, just like the master builder beautifies the house with fine trim, flooring, cabinets, and appliances.

Yes, the house is still just an empty house, isn't it. But finally, a young couple moves in and makes it a home, living there in peace and safety, and enjoying the quality craftsmanship. That is my spirit moving into my cleansed temple, to make it my permanent dwelling place. Now my son is a saint, a real believer, a Christian. He still has much maturing to do, just as the young couple must get settled, learn how to relate together in love, and begin raising their children. But it is no longer just a house being built; it is a home, establishing another Godly generation. As the couple lives within the framework of my righteousness they are an example and inspiration to others – especially to their children growing up. Thus the cycle begins again, and I have another completed monument to my infinite grace, another trophy of my righteousness, another beautiful Tabernacle in my New Jerusalem.

Oh my Father, thank you for leading me thus far, and for giving me the faith and the grace to continue into all that you have promised, all that you created me for.

What joy it is to hear you say that, my Lord and my God! My greatest desire is to have your heart within me! But Father, what is it about my heart that makes it different from anyone else's heart?

What is it about open hearts that you like so much?

And what happens to all the rest?

Can we recognize them in this life?

Alas, my Father! I can think of many times when I balked in unbelief and was unable to bear or endure what you allowed to come to me. I even got angry with you sometimes! I have had to repent deeply for those times.

No one but you, my Lord, and I am deeply grateful. So what you are saying is that I am basically no different from those with hard hearts, but for your grace and mercy and the working of your Holy Spirit. There certainly is nothing that I can boast about, for it is only you that broke my original hard heart and gave me this open heart. It is you that taught me how to respond to your Holy Spirit in repentance and submission. And it is you that leads me step by step in your righteousness.

You are welcome, my son. It is my pleasure that you do walk in my faith and grace into all that I lead you. You are a man after my own heart, as was King David in the Bible.

There are really only two kinds of hearts: hard hearts and open ones. Hard hearts are very common. Open hearts such as yours are rare, and are exceedingly precious to me. They are my jewels, my special treasures, my delight.

Only those with open hearts will allow me to purify them totally in this life, so they can be a part of my bride for Jesus at his returning.

They stop short somewhere along the way, they "waver in unbelief," so I must take them into the heavenlies to finish the job.

You can't always recognize them at first. But when I challenge their faith, those with hard hearts eventually balk in unbelief, resisting the discipline or trials according to their human understanding. Those with open hearts "bear all things, believe all things, hope all things, and endure all things." Their love never fails, for it is my love in them and it cannot fail.

By your own confession you did repent, and those times are now gone forever. I do not remember them; neither need you. Yet that does illustrate the work of my Holy Spirit. If your heart was hard, who else but my Spirit could break through and soften it, so that you could repent and receive my forgiveness, cleansing, restoration, and righteousness?

Yes! Now be aware of those around you. No matter what is their present stage of spiritual maturity, you will recognize them by their response to the promptings of my spirit when I point out a fault or challenge their faith. Those with hard hearts never cease to resist my spirit at every step. Nothing but judgment by my consuming fire will crack open that heart of stone. Those with open hearts hear my quiet voice, love my wisdom and my ways, and obey joyfully in response to my will.

Lord Jesus, I appreciate your lesson on open hearts, but why do you want me to be aware of those around me? How important is it that I recognize the open hearts in contrast to the hard hearts?

Are you saying that I am only called to serve those with open hearts?

Why do you mention the hungry world? I thought you said that you are not sending me to the hard of heart.

Enoch? What did he demonstrate, Lord?

Defeating death? May I also defeat death so I never have to die? Was there anyone else besides Enoch who never died?

Lord, what about King David? You said that he also had an open heart. And what about Abraham, who believed you so faithfully, and Moses, who talked with you face to face? Surely they are also members of your bride? Yet they all died!

I have a mission for you, my son. You will only be able to complete it as you discern the open hearts within those around you. You must recognize them, for I will not allow you to live in vanity and futility by responding to others whom I have not called you to serve.

Yes. I have called others to the hard of heart. But you are a part of my bride. Your focus is to prepare for our wedding. Your mission is:

- to discern by my spirit other members of my bride, all those with open hearts.
- to allow my spirit to bond all of you into one body under my headship, for encouragement and spiritual growth.
- to receive my righteousness, and my wisdom to walk in it from glory to glory into my perfection.
- to shine with the beauty and glory of my holiness to a hungry world.

As long as there are hard hearts in the world, they will be looking on. They want to see you fail in your attempt to walk with me in my perfection, so that they can justify remaining in sin themselves. I want to vindicate my name and my righteousness in you, and to demonstrate the power of my victory over sin, even within the weakness of human flesh, just as Enoch demonstrated before the flood.

That it is possible to walk with me in my perfection, even in the midst of a world filled with sin, thus entirely defeating sin and death.

[Laughing] Yes! Believe in the power of my resurrection life; walk in it by my spirit; keep my commandments in love, and like Enoch and Melchizedek, you will never die.

Yes. They are all here, waiting for you. My bride is not complete without every member. But none are perfected until you prevail in my victory over sin and death, as one body in me. They are watching you, my son, joyfully cheering as you also open your heart to the highest mission of all: your wedding with me, oneness in perfection in the Son of God.

Thank you my Father! I bow before you in awe and wonder as I stop to consider the beauty of the open heart you have given me. And what a fantastic mission! I now, more than ever, have a vision for your kingdom which makes all the pleasures of this world fade into nothing.

Yes, Father. I do see the lie hidden within the perverted ways of the world, and I want no part of it. I don't need any of satan's pleasures anyway; you give me so much joy and delight in your ways and your provisions that I can hardly stand it!

That's just the way I feel, Father! It delights me that you feel it too. But will anyone else understand this feeling? I think that many will scoff at my being "so heavenly minded that I'm no earthly good."

Yes, Father, then the unconditional, unfailing love of yours comes flooding into the open heart, and starts casting out all the fear, doubt, unbelief...

And I find that I am so in love with you that I cannot conceive of doing anything for any other motive than just pure love of you!

Just think how jealous the hard of heart will be, and how much they will long to join us!

And what pleasures we will share as we teach them also of your wisdom and your ways, watching all the hardness melt away into love and gratefulness...

Thank you my Lord and my God!

Welcome, my son, into the purity of heart that I've been guiding you toward. A pure heart is undivided, unmoved by the lusts and vanity of the world, but not because the world has lost its allure! You have a vision before you which is so much higher, that you are now able to recognize the world's vanity and perversions.

Yes, because your focus is now fixed upon my ways and my provision. That is a pure heart: it is a lover who has eyes only for her beloved. You have eyes only for me. Everything is good and is gratefully received as you recognize it comes from me; everything not of me hardly even exists anymore. Our love just grows, and all else begins to fade into oblivion.

Those with open hearts will understand, my son. They are lovers too. It starts with an open heart, you know; the willingness to receive from me without limit, in a love that bears all things; believes, hopes, and endures all things.

And as time goes on, I build your simple faith into a rock of absolute trust in my faithfulness which cannot be shaken. As I do, your heart is purified of all evil motivations...

My son, my son! What joy we share! And we have just begun to explore the height and depth and length and breadth of all that we are together! Do you realize how much still lies ahead? The joy we have at this moment will be multiplied many times over even before this kingdom age is through, and we have many ages together after that!

Yes, and what new joys await as their hard hearts also are broken and they are enabled to open up to receive my gospel of the ages...

And when we open up the kingdom to invite those who thought they were forever excluded won't it be exciting to see our joy reflected in their faces! Ahh, there have been love stories that ended with a satisfying "love conquers all," but ours is the reality of which all earthly romances were but a flitting imagination!

I deeply appreciate what you are teaching me about recognizing those with open hearts and pure hearts, and my mission to be one body with all of them by your Spirit. Please, Father, teach me how to relate to others with open hearts.

It sounds easy to relate to that kind of person, Father. But from my experience it seems that they are very rare indeed! Virtually everyone I know seems to take offense at times, myself included.

So if I seem to react poorly to another saint, or to a circumstance that just happened, does that mean that I just have some more growing to do?

Yes, Father, I do remember. In fact, sometimes it seems like those you've placed around me have so much growing to do, I don't see how they will ever be ready in time for your Son's returning.

Thank you, my Father, for delivering me from anxiousness. Let's just say that I am eager to see your word fulfilled, your kingdom come, and your will done here on earth as it is in heaven. And I am eager to see your Son face to face, in all his glory and perfection.

Yes my Father, I am ready.

You won't have trouble relating with them, my son. By their very nature those with open hearts neither take offense nor intentionally cause offense. They are meek, teachable, humble learners. Relate to them as a humble learner yourself, and everyone is edified.

Not so, my son. I already delivered you from offenses. You are mistaking growing pains for offenses. I am requiring rapid growth in my body now, and it hurts to grow fast. Being stretched beyond your normal growth rate is similar to waking up in a strange new place. You feel some disorientation, and it takes you some time to adjust to the new surroundings. But you do not lash out in unbelief, anger, or fear. Instead you temporarily put aside all that you cannot comprehend, and grow into your new surroundings step by step, by listening, reaching out and touching, tasting, pondering, and questioning. This is how you learn.

That's right. And remember, those around you all have growing to do too, often in a different area than yourself. That is why I bring you together, so that you can challenge each other on things in which I am maturing you.

Careful, my son. That is often the way you appear to them, as well. You do have many areas of relative maturity, but you also have many "blind spots." I send others who can see them, and you must listen and learn from me through them, just as I expect them to listen and learn from me through you. And as for not being ready "in time," you need not be anxious. The timing is entirely in my hands.

You speak of Jesus as my Son. And that is true. He is my firstborn, the full expression of my nature and character from before time began. He is worthy to bear my name. Your worship and praise to me must go through him. But now I show you a higher truth. Ready?

Until now, Jesus was my only Son. But now I am bringing many sons to birth, as one body. You are my son, worthy to bear my name.

I know, Father, that I am called to be your son and to bear your name, but never on the same level as Jesus the Christ. Jesus is fully God and eternally one with you, while I am just an adopted brother.

What do you mean, bigger than that?

Well, no Father. Now that you put it that way, I know that you are preparing a perfect bride for Jesus, and that He is the head of a perfect, many-membered body, called the Church. You shared that with me in the lesson on the physical body, back in Volume 1.

Still bigger than that? How, Father?

Wow... I'm not sure I understand what you are saying, Father, but I think you said that I am a part of God, and so is a rock or a tree or a bug or bird, and so are even the wicked! That sounds a lot like pantheism, Lord!

But Father, is it true that we are all becoming part of you? It sounds to me like there is really a temptation for pride there. I somehow can't imagine my saying, "I am part of God." It just sounds too boastful.

My Lord God, it is truly awesome to think that I am part of you. But I humbly believe all that you have spoken, knowing that I am just as one tiny molecule, maturing with you and with the multitude of other members of your body. I'm beginning to understand what it means to "partake of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption of the world and its lusts." [2 Peter 1:4] Thank you Father!

Your humility is false. Jesus is indeed fully God. He is me, from eternity manifest into your space-time realm – though as the Christ, his physical body still had to learn obedience through suffering. But I am bigger than that.

Do you think that one perfect physical body can contain me? Do you think that my vision, my Plan of the Ages, is limited to one?

You, my sons, are now my perfect body! Jesus is the first member, the head, the authority. His obedience through suffering showed you the way to me. You do not fully understand yet because you are incomplete, like a bride without her groom. At your wedding I will complete you all in oneness with Jesus and with each other. Yet I am bigger than that.

The entire universe cannot contain me. My Plan of the Ages is to mature all creation into oneness with me, so all things have their place within my perfect body. Time will not cease until all things have entered fully into eternity, for then all shall be as it was in the beginning of time, when I was all and in all.

Not at all. Pantheism is a perversion of truth. It accepts my vision but denies my means of fulfilling it: my law, discipline, my wisdom, and my righteousness. All religions have a germ of truth, yet all fall short, perverted by the limitations of human understanding.

But it is true. You are now part of me, having entered into my eternity in many small ways. But is the hand proud to be part of the body? Is a muscle cell proud to be part of the body? Is a single molecule, or even a single atom proud to be part of the body? No. Pride is only a result of a wrong relationship to me. But I am making all things right. There is neither pride nor false humility within my perfect body. Pride claims the glory for what I am sovereignly doing. False humility resists my sovereign work through unbelief. But my sons gratefully receive all that I say, all that I am, and grow in all of me as we become one.

That last lesson on kingdom relationships was wonderful, Father, but difficult. Please help me to understand it.

Gladly. Consider the first Adam. Even though created in my image, he was immature and naïve. I separated him into male and female to help him grow in this realm. My goal was to fill the earth with my many-membered body. I also gave him my law and challenged him with temptation to enable him to grow spiritually. My goals were to mature him in my wisdom and holiness, and fill the earth with my nature and character. He chose the hard road, which was sad but inevitable. Every child will test his parent's law. The discipline of breaking it helps him learn the blessings of keeping it.

What would it have been like if Adam had never fallen into sin?

There are no "ifs" in my kingdom, my son. Yet I will answer for sake of the illustration. Had Adam chosen the easy road of submission and obedience to my commandment even before fully understanding my law, he and his family would have been tempted many more times in other ways. In each temptation he would have had the same choice. By continuing to choose the easy road he would have matured in me from glory to glory. Needing only the gentlest reproofs of wisdom, he would have become so sensitive to my training and discipline that no pain, no sorrow, no suffering would have been needed to perfect and complete him in me.

What about all Adam's children?

Assuming his children made the same choices, they would still all be alive, for there would have been no death. They would have matured along with him, in perfect unity. It is only sin that causes disharmony among my children.

Would you still have needed to send Jesus into the world?

Jesus created the world! He is the head, in whom all things exist! Yet he would not have had to become flesh and die. Where there is no sin, there is no need for a savior from sin. If Adam had never sinned, there would have been no need for the second Adam. There would have been no need for a sacrificial lamb to satisfy my law's demand for death as the payment for sin, nor any marriage of the bride to the Lamb, for there would have been no divorce. In a sense, Adam's family would be my earthly body, maturing to become my temple, my dwelling place for all eternity.

What do you mean when you say that there would have been no divorce?

When Adam sinned, he divorced himself from me and became his own god, or more literally, a harlot to satan. The marriage of the bride and the Lamb rectifies that, because the Lamb paid the price for his sin. It is like a remarriage of a divorced couple. This time our marriage will last. You have learned your lesson! Only in oneness with my sinless lamb are you acceptable in my sight, for me to mature into my perfect habitation for all eternity.

So if Adam had not sinned he would have completely fulfilled your goals and would have been a perfect temple for your glory?

Yes. In the fullness of time my son Adam would have been a fit dwelling place for the eternal God forever. But remember, Adam in maturity includes all his children, all things under his dominion, the whole perfect world.

That sounds great, Father! Why, oh why did you allow Adam to fall into sin?

Because then none of my creation would ever have known the consequences of violating my law, and there always would have been a hint of doubt as to whether my ways are the very best ways or not. As it is in reality, because of Adam's sin, all creation now experiences the horror of the slightest deviation from my law. They also experience a deep gratefulness and appreciation for my love. I gave myself, the second Adam, to suffer the consequences of the sin of the first Adam, to redeem my own bride back unto myself. The result is that my glory is more brightly displayed against the backdrop of the awfulness of sin. Yet my goal of having a physical body, a worthy dwelling place for my glory, is fulfilled either way.

Somehow it seems strange for you to talk of your goal as having a physical body. I know we are the body of which Jesus is the head, but I still tend to think of the ultimate goal as our being elevated into the realm of spirit, not you coming down to the realm of the physical!

It all depends upon the perspective you have. From my perspective in eternity, physical is not coming down. It's simply a realm for me to express my nature and character in a new way. I do not change, but I do develop new ways to express myself. I am giving, caring, sharing love, so I create those who will receive my love. I created Adam as my own precious treasure, upon whom I shall ever lavish my love and display my glory. I take delight, as I now bring the completed Adam to birth. I am a father, you know. My many-membered son is my newborn child. I shall enjoy many ages of fathering him into perfection and maturity.

My Father and my God! What a privilege to be a part, even though just a tiny molecule, of your own precious child! I thank and praise you with all my heart for being my Father. I joyfully submit to all that you have promised.



Father, your lessons on Adam and kingdom relationships have impressed me as being very significant. I sense that our relationships are important to you in the kingdom.

The only thing, Father? What about learning your wisdom and your ways? What about learning how to love you and to love one another? What about growing in appreciation of the many leveled depth and beauty of your holiness, sovereignty, love, power, and glory?

How do I do this, Father?

That's difficult, my Father. It's hard enough to reckon it done when the more I learn of you the more it seems I have yet to grow, to really become one with you. Sometimes I feel like I'm going backwards! It seems like it must take forever for me to fully partake of your divine nature and character. But when I look around me, and see all the excluding, judging, pride, criticizing, condemning, and even downright antagonistic attitudes among the various religious organizations, I have real trouble even conceiving that there will ever be any oneness in your body, apart from a mighty miracle on your part.

Oops! I do remember times when I also had immature, antagonistic, and condemning attitudes! Yet I always considered myself a Christian, zealous for truth and righteousness! So are you saying that those wrong doctrines and areas of immaturity are not significant barriers to the oneness that you are creating within your body?

Yes, my son. *In fact, the kingdom of God is relationships.* The oneness that I require in my body sometimes seems like such a big and difficult thing to my precious ones. I make it simpler by saying it is actually the only thing.

It is all relationships, all part of oneness, my son. If your focus is totally on becoming one with me, you will be intensely learning my wisdom, my ways, my holiness, sovereignty, love, power, and glory, and how to love and be one with my body on earth.

You don't, my son. Only I can create oneness from distrust, doubt, and division. Recognize what I am doing, reckon it done, rejoice and be grateful, and with eager expectation see the fruits of oneness more clearly day by day.

Yes, it will indeed take many ages and many mighty miracles to fully manifest the oneness, though from my viewpoint in eternity it is already done. I impart to you now the vision to see it from my perspective, for you will not be effective in carrying my deliverance to any with the "downright antagonistic" attitudes until you see them as I see them. Remember that I do not judge according to superficial attitudes or beliefs, but only according to the heart. Antagonistic, condemning attitudes do not always indicate a hard heart; sometimes they indicate an immature zealotry for truth and righteousness. It is only when you see things from my perspective that you can really love those whose doctrines and areas of relative maturity are different from your own.

An individual molecule within the body will never be the whole body. You will never be independently perfect, for you will never by yourself be God. Your perfection is only in oneness with me. Just as every molecule in a baby's body, though one with his body, must still learn how to function under control of his head, so you must learn how to relate to me. All doctrines are incomplete and imperfect in the human mind. They are only completed as all things come into perfect oneness with me.

All doctrines are incomplete and imperfect, Father? Even the ones that you are teaching me now? What am I to believe?

Will you give me an example, Father?

That brings up a point that has been troubling me, Father. Some people, even those who call themselves Christians and know the Bible, have been condemning me for believing some of the things you have been teaching me, such as this subject of the ultimate reconciliation of all things into oneness with you, and the finite punishment of sin according to the measure of the wickedness of each person's deeds. In fact, it seems like most people who still believe in infinite, eternal punishment for the majority of humanity are quick to condemn me for my faith. How am I to treat them, Father?

Yes, Father. Thank you. That is a big relief to me. I know that you do not condemn, but sometimes it has been hard to relate in love to those who are condemning me. Especially when they teach others doctrines which I know to be false, I feel a deep grief for them and hatred for their evil. I see such a bondage of fear and hopelessness among those who have been taught that your love and mercy cannot ever triumph over the rebellion and hardness of heart in the majority of humanity.

Believe all things that I confirm to your spirit. Just trust me to put it all together in due time. *The kingdom of God is relationships, my son!* All things are related to every other thing, and none can be complete or perfect until all things in all creation are harmonized.

Except in perfect oneness with me, prophecy is partial. My word through my prophets is often despised and rejected because of this, but I open up your heart now to receive it. Especially if it seems wrong, or inconsistent with the facts or circumstances, hide it in your heart and wait on my spirit to confirm to you the specific wisdom and guidance I have for you through it. Then instead of condemning my prophets, you will be one with them, even while they mature in their oneness with me.

Firstly, don't push them by giving them more of my truth than they are ready to receive. Wait for my spirit to prompt you for the right timing as well as the right way to share the deeper truths of my gospel. Secondly, discern their hearts. If a heart is really hard, you are wasting your time trying to share any of my gospel, even the simple truths that you may be able to agree with them on. If a heart is open, you will see my precious one receiving and growing in the little things I am giving day by day, even if there is not yet an openness for the deeper truths. Encourage them in things they are growing in. Do not be anxious about their immature doctrines or their condemning you for things they do not yet understand.

Those feelings are good, my son. You are of me. Your grief and hatred over false doctrines are also of me. Oneness is not compromise or acceptance of evil! Your most fervent hatred is but a faint shadow of my wrath against sin. Do not minimize the torment of the hard of heart; fear should be a way of life for them. Yet I give you hope, even for them, that my love and mercy does indeed triumph. Love them, even while you hate their false doctrines, for my perfect oneness brings all things into my light. This truth is the light that dispels darkness.

My gracious, loving Lord Jesus Christ, what a tremendous freedom and peace I receive from your last lessons on kingdom relationships, Adam, and oneness! I feel full to overflowing with love for all mankind, for you gave me faith and hope even for the most hard-hearted. I am so joyful, I can hardly stand it! I'd love to hear more about the truth of your oneness being the light that dispels the darkness!

Yes, my Lord. I think my mind understands. But, I'm sorry to say, my heart does not fully comprehend that yet. All around me I still see self and satan competing with you for your lordship. In fact it seems like much of your creation is contending with you for that title.

That is a strange exception, my Lord. As you just said, you are the only lord, master, and king. How can anyone claim to be some sort of a lord, master, or king in any area in which they are acknowledging your lordship?

But Lord, it seems to me that they're not just trying to resist your lordship, they are actually doing it! If your lordship is irresistible, why do so many seem to successfully resist it?

Yes, my son! You would love to hear it, for I would love to share it. You are responding to my heart's desire which I planted within your heart. The truth that dispels the darkness has been presented to you before in many ways. But now I make it simpler, so that even little children who read these lines will understand. There is only one God, one lord, one master, and one king. I am he.

Self and satan are not really in competition for the lordship over mankind. They are one and the same thing: the lie, denying my lordship and pretending that life can exist without me. There are many in the world who claim to be lord, master, or king; in every case their claim is utterly false, a prefabrication of illusions based upon a foundation of lies, except in those specific areas in which from their hearts they acknowledge my lordship.

To acknowledge my lordship is to receive my authority in specific areas of my calling, my gifts, and my anointing. Every son whom I bring to the birth without exception is called to rule in the areas of my choice. Some accept my choice without knowing me, thinking they are their own ruler. Or they may bow to my lordship in superficial areas of their souls, yet still try to resist my lordship in deeper areas of their hearts. Mankind is in my image, many layered, deep and unsearchable in heart, soul, and body. I am a ruler, and I must rule over my creation through each and every area, no matter how tiny, of each and every one who in humility becomes one with me. Attempting to resist my lordship is deception, the root of sin, the essence of the lie, for in truth my lordship is infinite, eternal, and irresistible.

They think they are successful, but it is a lie. My mercy and grace are also infinite, eternal, and irresistible. I give time and circumstances to all, to prove to their own satisfaction the folly of resisting my lordship in each area of their lives. This is a process, for my lordship is so all-encompassing that no one can fully comprehend it in all areas of his life at once.

What about me, my Lord? For many years I have sought with all my heart to make you the total, absolute lord over every area of my life. Do I still not fully comprehend your lordship in every area of my life?

Well... sometimes, a few... but mostly not...

Oh, my Lord! I am very sad to hear that! I repent and humble myself before you. Please forgive me! I really thought I was doing well in acknowledging your lordship in my life. I don't really care about wielding your power and authority, you know, but I just want to humbly walk with...

Wow, my Lord Jesus Christ! Please forgive me for trying to live two lives: my own, as well as yours within me. I realize now how impossible that is, just like trying to serve two masters. Show me how to acknowledge your lordship in every area of my life. I have for a long time reckoned my old nature dead and buried with you at Golgotha, but evidently there are still many areas that I don't know how to submit to your lordship. Please, with all my heart I ask you, manifest your lordship over every area of my life. And as for your power and authority, do whatever you will with or through me. I repent of that false humility. Please teach me the true humility of proper submission to your lordship so that you may use me to display your glory and authority however you wish.

No, my son. In the first place, you do not make me lord. I *am* lord. I always was and always will be lord. In each area of your life, when your hardness of heart (your resistance to my lordship) is crushed by my discipline, I bring you to a place of humility. Only in humility and meekness do you see me as I am to acknowledge my lordship, power, and authority. Think now, do your day by day actions display my authority and power, with miracles and confirming signs following?

To that extent you are not fully walking in my lordship. In every area of your life in which you are fully walking under my lordship, the power of my authority comes through into the actions of your life, and the beauty and glory of my eternal life shines to those around you.

But I care about my power and authority through you, for that is how I administer my rule over my creation. Your humility is false. True humility empties self only to be filled with me. I am all power and authority; you cannot be filled with me without being filled with my power and authority, as well as my beauty and glory. My lordship is the fullness of my spirit within you, so that your own life is no longer an issue, but only my powerful and glorious eternal life, flowing through you.

I forgive you, my son, for I understand your weakness. I accepted your acknowledgment of my lordship at face value, even though it never went to the depths of your heart. You opened up to me all you could, but you do not know the depths of your own heart. I give each phase of your relationship with me time to mature, for I am never anxious; I see the end result from the beginning. As you ask, I open up your heart to receive the filling of my spirit again, in a new way. Be aware of my spirit at all times. Trust me to prompt you whenever you begin to do something apart from the flow of my eternal life. As you hear and obey those quiet promptings of my spirit moment by moment, my lordship over you matures and is manifest through you.

Lord Jesus, John 8:12 speaks of you as the light of the world, and says that those who follow you will not walk in darkness. Will you please share with me just what you mean?

That is a beautiful picture of your light, Lord, but what about the darkness?

Are you saying that in the fullness of your presence, your saints have no more shadow of ignorance? Do they know all things even as you know all things?

Yes, my son, with great delight! I now give you a vision of the inescapable brilliance of my presence. It is like the sun; no one can hide from its warmth! Imagine a fragile flower, eagerly awaiting the dawn. As the sun rises, the flower joyfully faces it and drinks in the life-giving rays, growing strong and beautiful. The sun represents my glorious truth: the beauty, wisdom, power, and goodness of my ways, my nature, my character, and my law. The flower represents each of my precious saints. No matter how young and tender, they stand openly exposed to the full force of the sun, joyfully, willingly receiving as much of me as I choose to shine upon them. Thus they mature from glory to glory in the light of my truth, learning of me by dwelling continually in my presence, full of delight and wonder.

What is darkness? It is merely the absence of light. In my saints, darkness is ignorance. As they grow in the knowledge of my truth, the ignorance flees as quickly and as easily as the darkness flees the dawning. At the high noon of my presence, there is no more darkness, no not even a shadow, and my saint walks with me in the light even as I am in the light.

Yes, but no. They know all things that I have revealed to them, all things that are needful for them at the time, place, and circumstance in which I have placed them. They walk with me in the fullness of my peace, joy, and love, perfectly content in what I have given them and where I have brought them thus far. They totally trust me for the future, knowing that it is under my perfect control, and believing that I do indeed perform all that I have promised. In that sense, they have no more ignorance. But only I am God; only in the fullness of my eternity are all things in all times fully known. My saints will fill many ages growing into my eternity, into the full sum of all knowledge which is only found in unity with me. So in that sense, all earthly knowledge, prophecy, wisdom, doctrines – indeed all things in this realm – are only partial until I fully manifest the oneness of all creation with Father God.

You keep talking about saints, Lord. What about sinners? When I asked about darkness, I thought they would be the first that you would talk about.

Be not anxious. The sinner is also in my hand; do you think that he can escape the brilliant light of my presence? I tell you no!

*He may turn away in rebellion and pride,  
or run from my presence and endeavor to hide.  
He may shake his clenched fist in anger and shame  
or curse me and blaspheme my thrice holy name.  
Though he lives many deaths in the hell of his choice,  
there is no place beyond reach of my loving voice.  
Though he bury his heart beneath the hard stone,  
even there has the light of my truth clearly shone.  
Dawn cannot be escaped – the sun cannot be restrained!  
My light shines down with fire that cannot be contained.  
In my time and my way I will open his eyes.  
He will see me as I am, then, what a surprise!  
He will find that it was I whom he sought all his life.  
He will cry in repentance for his rebellion and strife.  
The ignorance and hardness of heart will be gone,  
dispelled by the light of my truth – a new saint is born.*

Poetry, Lord? On a subject so serious?

Serious only to one of limited faith. I am not anxious; I know the end from the beginning. My love is irresistible. Consider angry Saul on the road to Damascus; could he resist the brilliant light of my truth? No! When my truth and beauty are unveiled in a sinner's heart, when he recognizes my infinite grace, when he really sees the goodness of my ways, the righteousness of my nature and character, and the perfection of my wisdom, he always bows in repentance to accept my lordship.

Lord, you gave the example of the sunshine upon the flower, to illustrate how each of your saints receives the light of your truth. What is a good example for the sinner?

He too is a flower, my son, yet only as a seed, buried deep under the rock like a corpse in a tomb, doubly dead, filled with corruption and decay. He sees nothing, hears nothing, and the earth over him prevents light from entering.

In that illustration, how can your light ever then dispel his darkness?

His darkness is not only ignorance, it is also hardness of heart. But the light of my truth shines hot, like fire cracking the rock and breaking open the tomb. My fire burns up all that is not of me. Then in my time and my way, no matter how hard was the rock over his stone-cold corpse, my love penetrates like the warm spring rain and awakens the seed I planted, for I am the resurrection and the life.

What a wonderful illustration! Then even the corruption and decay become like fertilizer for the newly growing seed as it sprouts up through the cracks in the rock. Thank you!

I bow in worship to you, Oh my Lord Jesus Christ! Just talking with you about the light of your truth moves me to want to express my adoration and praise. I dearly love your ways, your wisdom, and the revelation of your truth. I love your name: “the Light of the World.” Will you please share more with me about the light of your truth?

What do you mean when you say, “Truth is only found in me?”

Wow! The implications of that are staggering! Do you mean that every revelation that I have ever received from you and passed on to others, everything I’ve ever spoken or written (including *The Gospel of the Kingdom*), and even the Holy Bible, are not really truth?

But Lord, that seems to take the assurance and power out of our faith! Mankind has to have something that they can hold on to and trust, put their weight upon, so to speak. Christians in the past have at least had the assurance that the Holy Bible was absolute, infallible truth, inspired and preserved by God himself.

Lord, please pardon me for pushing the point, but it seems that you have opened the door for many self-styled “prophets” to claim that they heard from your spirit that the Bible means something different, thus leading many astray.

Thank you my Lord Jesus Christ, my way, my truth, my life, my living word. I open up my heart to all that your Holy Spirit speaks through whomever or whatever you choose to speak, trusting you to guide me into all truth.

With great joy, my son! Your love of my truth is actually your love of myself, for I am truth. You are still tending to think of truth as facts, knowledge, wisdom, or revelation. In reality none of those is ever truth, because without exception all are incomplete, partial, limited in depth and scope. Truth is only found in me, seeing from my perspective by my Spirit. For anyone to know truth, they must have an active, loving, trusting relationship with me.

Many of my saints come to me to find truth, learn something of me, then share with others what they have learned. This is good, but be aware that in the sharing, it is no longer truth. What you take from me and give to another, is only partial – until by my spirit I come into the heart of the hearer and bear witness to it.

Correct. Why is that so staggering? Look at all the various denominations of those who claim to believe the Bible. If by itself it is truth, why is there so much disagreement? No, my son, truth is much bigger than all of that. Fullness of truth is found only in relationship with me.

That is not far from wrong, but you have left out one important detail. I not only inspired the Bible and preserved it, but I also fill it with my life. Without my life it is dead and useless, or even harmful. With the filling of my eternal life by my Holy Spirit, it becomes infinite, a many-layered revelation of myself, my nature, my character, my law, my wisdom, my glory.

Leading whom astray? If anyone follows or trusts a man, he is already led astray. No one has truth for you but me. I am the word, the *living word*, my son. If you are listening for and trusting in only me, then I will guide you into all truth and protect you from the lie. Though I speak to you through many weak, partial, or even impure vessels, my spirit speaking to your heart unites with all that is right and sets on fire all that is wrong. As you walk by my spirit, you will never stumble in darkness, for my light of truth burns in your own heart, illuminating your pathway.

Oh Lord Jesus Christ, I must admit, that last lesson on truth hits hard. All my life I have trusted the Holy Bible as absolute truth. I have spent thousands of happy hours searching it, verifying people's comments by it, looking to it for guidance, wisdom, understanding, and encouragement, and just worshipping you in it. Is all that wrong?

Why then did you say that the Bible is not truth? Don't you always speak by your Holy Spirit to all who read it. even for those who don't know you?... Oh! I think I know! Satan is probably right there too, trying to cloud their minds and insert his lies.

But regardless of the wrangling over subtle interpretations of doctrine, can we not at least agree on the words themselves as infallible? An example is the verse that clearly says, "Thou shalt not kill." I would think that is exactly what you mean, and people should just take it at face value. There should never be any controversy over it.

Not even a plant? What will we eat?

No, my son, it is not wrong. It is good, and I am pleased. You were not really looking to nor trusting in a book, you were looking to me and trusting me to guide you by my spirit through scripture. I do that for many, though they may not always be aware that it is my spirit uniting with the words on the page that is actually guiding them into my truth.

Correct. Those who are spiritually dead can hear satan, but not me. To them scripture is foolishness. Sinners whom I have made alive but not yet filled with my spirit do hear me, but with a mixture of my truth and their own mental understanding. Some look to the Bible as absolute truth. They make a god of it, and think that they have eternal life in it. But if the word is not united with my spirit the result is only an eternal wrangling over words, often in anger, dissension, criticism, or condemnation.

Wrong. A sharp lawyer can prove anything he wants to from the Bible. He can even show that it can't be of me, for on the surface it has many contradictions. But it is of me. Through my Holy Spirit, I convey my way, my truth, and my life through any part of the Bible you choose to read. When seen by my spirit, even one verse from the Bible is so full of me that it spans all truth for all time – for those who take time to worship and meditate on me in it. Your example, "Thou shalt not kill," means different things to different people. Don't kill what? Human adults? Babies? A fetus? A new conception? A sperm or an unfertilized egg? Animals? Bugs? Plants? You must understand life and death from my perspective before you can answer even that simple question! My truth revealed within that one verse is so vast that you cannot fully comprehend it in this age. I assure you that in the ages to come you will be so full of my truth within the sanctity of my eternal life that you will hesitate to kill even the tiniest insect or plant.

Everything for its purpose. Whatever I lead you to eat, you will receive gratefully. Instead of killing it, you will blend its life into yours.



I think I get the point, Father. You are saying that I dare not trust in scripture without the illumination of your Holy Spirit, because it can mean many different things if I just try to interpret it with my own mind.

Thank you, Father. I take that to heart, also. I never want to be guilty of presuming upon your grace and mercy. Thank you that your comfort is by both the “rod and the staff,” by your firm discipline and your wise guidance. What about some other examples?

I have always heard that verse interpreted to mean that even though our bodies have to die, we will have eternal life in our spirits. Do you mean that it is time for us to believe that verse in a more literal way?

Oh! Wow! Thank you, my Father! I eagerly rejoice to be a part of that body, not just to be delivered from the sting of physical death, but also because I look forward to seeing you some day face to face with my physical eyes.

Correct. Take for example, “The Lord is my shepherd. I shall not want.” You see that verse and correctly understand by my spirit that I am your guide, your provider, your friend, your protector, your ever-present help in time of trouble, and many other things which I speak through that verse. But if one who is not yet born of me were to see that verse, he may incorrectly interpret it to mean that I will protect him from the consequences of the evil path that he has chosen. Or worse, he may interpret it to mean that he already is born of me, when he is not; thus he may use that verse wrongly to comfort the lack of peace that I gave him to cause him to seek after me.

“I am the resurrection and the life... everyone who lives and believes in me shall never die.” How few of my precious ones have dared to believe this! Almost without exception they look around them at all the saints of ages past who have died, and waver in unbelief. But now it is time, and I urge you from the depths of my spirit, do not look to others nor to the past, but trust only in me in my living word!

You already have eternal life in your spirit! Now it is time for the redemption of the body as well. I am preparing a many-membered body which has the faith that walks in and thus demonstrates to the world my victory over death. You are a part of that body.

Someday? Look and live! Open your physical eyes, my son, and see me in my living word; see me in my brothers and sisters around you; see me in the beauty of my creation; see me in the wisdom and goodness of my law, at work all around you. Scripture is a bigger word than you have known, my son. Scripture just means writing; holy scripture is my writing. I did not stop writing at creation, nor did I stop writing with the compilation of the “Old and New Testaments.” *I am the living word*, and I am everywhere, writing to you my beloved of all my nature and character, all my plans and purposes for you, all my love and blessings for all my precious ones. *Look and live!*

Father God, I am concerned that some may take your lessons on truth and scripture too far, and fall into error. A lot has been written that sounds so good, even like it was inspired by you, that is actually leading people astray. For that matter, some who've spent a lifetime of leaning exclusively upon the Old and New Testaments as absolute truth may reject this part of *The Gospel of the Kingdom*. I know! I was that way once – zealous and dogmatic to claim the the Holy Bible is inerrant, exclusive, and all-sufficient. How can those who read this be assured of not falling into error?

Yes, Father? That sounds strange, coming from you. Everything you have said so far seems to be saying to let my spirit rule over my mind, or operate with the mind of Christ rather than my own mind. But now in this question you seem to be saying the opposite!

Please teach me how to do that, Father.

But Father, many people have been doing just that for thousands of years, and they still come up with doctrines that are in error!

My beloved son, I have not given you a spirit of fear or anxiousness. I encourage you: trust me in this, as in all else. Just as I by my spirit lead you into all truth, so also I keep you from error. I know the weakness of physical, time-focussed beings. As each one enters into my kingdom, to see from the perspective of my eternal spirit, such questions will not even be asked. But for now, here is my answer. Error is simply a mental misunderstanding resulting in wrong actions. I have given you a sound mind. Use your mind to pursue the question of error diligently and sincerely, and I will guide you.

That is correct. In all other questions, your spirit walks with my spirit into all truth. In this question of spiritual error, you cannot walk by spirit, because the spirit of error is so deceptive. If the question is even raised, it is because the spirit of error is at work, and then no one can be completely certain that he isn't being deceived. The very act of raising the question results in doubt, which opens the door to the spirit of deception. That is why I said you must deal with the spirit of error from the perspective of the physical mind.

Start with the foundation that has already been laid. Faith must have a firm foundation. Go back as far as you must to be certain that your foundation is absolutely solid. All that I build is straight and true, resting four-square upon all that I have built in the past. I don't stop halfway and change my plans, nor do I deny that which I have already spoken. If you have faith for both Old and New Testaments, that is good. But if you have faith for only one book or one verse, that is fine too. I reveal all of myself within any of my scripture. Start wherever your faith rests, pursue it diligently with an open mind, and I will guide your mind by my spirit, building my solid rock of truth upon the foundation that I have laid. When your faith is firm, you have my peace.

Wrong. Those who start with error, basic presumptions and assumptions from past teaching and conditionings, remain in error.

It seems to me that it is impossible for anyone to do anything else. We are all made of the teachings and conditionings from the past, and some of those are bound to be false.

I think I understand. As long as we regard past teachings and conditionings, our mental understanding of scripture is warped, and we have difficulty hearing your spirit guiding our mind. But when I come to you as a little child, with the simple faith you planted in my heart when I first received your gospel, forsaking all else, then my mind hears from your spirit. Thus you reveal yourself to my mind through scripture, verse by verse.

Yes, Father?

Thank you for that reminder from James 1:5. I do believe that you give wisdom generously and without reproach to all who ask in faith. I know that your wisdom is free from error. I hate that double-mindedness that receives a revelation from you and then looks to the world for approval and wavers in unbelief. Thank you for leading me into truth and keeping me from error. But I'm still concerned about others who are bound to past teachings and conditionings. How do I help them to be delivered from error and to rebuild their faith solidly upon you, the truth, especially as revealed through your holy scriptures?

Wrong again. Those who are of the evil one are made only of teachings and conditionings of the past. But you are of me. Your spirit is reborn, and is nurtured continually by my spirit. Even within one whose flesh nature is still at war with their spirit nature, there is something upon which their faith can rest, for it is my faith, and I put it there. It may only be one verse of scripture, for example the verse that I first used to bring them into assurance of my love and forgiveness. The teachings, conditionings, doubts, or fears of the past do not touch that rock of faith that I have planted in each heart that is of me.

Not quite. You don't forsake everything else. I do speak through the teachings and doctrines of those around you. You must simply remain diligent to use that sound mind I have given you to be sure that each thing you receive does line up four-square with all that I have already revealed to your heart. If anything doesn't line up yet, hold it in your heart and ponder it, until my spirit of revelation shows you what to do with it. Now, another key.

When a subject comes up that is beyond your present level of faith, you must first ask me for wisdom. If you first go to inspirational books, people, or even to the scriptures for wisdom, you are opening yourself to the spirit of error. I am the one who gives wisdom. Ask me first. If I open the scriptures or lead you to others, trust me to give my wisdom through them.

First, discern their will. Do not try to help those determined to defend their ignorance. Only I can deal with that. But if their will is set to do my will, if they are actually willing to act upon each revelation that I do open up to their heart, then share with them about the fruits of the spirit. Truth is spirit life. Spirit life bears spirit fruit. False doctrines bear fruits of fear, anxiousness, bitterness, anger, pride, condemnation, perversion, and bondage. Doctrines that are of me bear fruits of love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, and self-control.

Thank you, Father, from the bottom of my heart, for your teaching on truth, error, and scripture. I don't fully understand it all yet, but it certainly gives me more peace regarding all the religious doctrines that have never seemed quite right to me in the past.

Father, is the mystery of which you speak the same as that mentioned in Ephesians 3:8-11, that the wisdom of God is made known through the Church to angelic rulers? Or is it the mystery described in Colossians 1:25 – 2:3, that Jesus Christ himself, in whom is hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge, is in us, the hope of glory?

Didn't Paul say in Colossians 1:26 that the mystery has now been manifested to the saints? Wasn't it his job to bring it to light? Why do you say we can't understand it?

I assumed that everyone who is filled with and guided by your Holy Spirit would be walking in it.

You're right, my Father. I confess that I am just a beginner in your kingdom. You are so awesomely great that I expect to be a beginner for a long time. Thank you for being willing to expand my faith and vision. I really want to learn more about this mystery of the gospel.

Thank you, Father. You are right, that is truly beyond my human capacity to understand. It is difficult enough to consider that this weak physical body can be used in just a small way to express you, in all your awesome greatness, to your creation. But when you say that my physical body is now one by marriage to your spirit life in Christ, and when you talk about this physical body as your own through which you fully express yourself in this realm, all I can do is bow to worship. Your will is done!

You are welcome, my son. Remember that what you are learning now is a great mystery. It cannot be understood by the natural mind. Those who operate only by the natural mind will persecute you over this. Do not fear or react to them, for in reality they persecute me.

Yes, those and more. The mystery is a many-layered, many-splendored thing. But mankind always wants to put it into a quick and easy summary for his understanding. I tell you, he cannot; if he could it would not be a mystery! Yet I will now share a limited summary with you to stretch your faith and give you a better appreciation of who I am and who you are.

Yes, the mystery has been revealed, and it is clearly spelled out in many scriptures, but how many comprehend? How many believe? How many actually walk in the fullness of it?

Not so, my son. Go back and study the lesson on lordship. You have just begun to shine with the glory of my righteousness. You have just begun to rule with the mighty power of my wisdom and authority. You have just begun to comprehend the vastness of my love, the perfection of my beauty, the purity of my peace and joy, and the depth of my truth.

Hear carefully, my son. You are the highest of my creation; I made you for my own good pleasure. I created you to share my nature and my character, to display my glory to the rest of my creation, and to accomplish in the physical all that I do in the spirit. Yet I knew that to do all this in your strength would result in pride and your downfall, as with Lucifer. So I first allowed his sin and death to claim your mortal bodies, and then came to you in the body of Jesus Christ to redeem you back to myself. Here then is the mystery. It is the marriage of two very different life forms: Physical life, humbled by death, is now one with my spirit life in Christ Jesus, so all that I am, my power, glory, wisdom, authority, truth, beauty, and love, may be expressed in the physical realm through my many-membered physical body.

I thank you again, my Father, for your lessons on truth, scripture, and error. Your teaching keeps growing on me. I sense a greater peace than I have ever known, now that I can trust you to keep me in the truth of your living word, and keep me from falling into error. More than ever before, I see that the fruits of your Holy Spirit have been maturing in my life ever since you began teaching me your truth.

But Father, most of the great revivals in the past were started by the “hell and damnation” preaching which awoke fear in the hearers, causing them to repent. In your lesson on reaching the lost, you said that was okay!

I understand. They all did the best they could with what they had, using the wrong doctrines they had been taught, and that was okay for them. But they died without really entering the fullness of your kingdom. All they had faith for was to “go to heaven when they die.” But now you are giving us your kingdom truth, so we can walk more fully in the freedom of your kingdom, even right here on earth.

You are welcome, my son. Truth is freedom, you know. Doctrines can be a bondage to be anxiously defended, often with persecution, anger, condemnation, even martyrdom for the “heretic.” But I Am the truth. I defend myself (and vindicate my name) with my unfailing righteousness. Those condemning others to perpetual torment and manipulating them into bondage through fear of death and hell, only prove that they know not the truth. They say “lord, lord” with their lips, but know me not in their hearts. They have no comprehension of who I am, of my absolute sovereignty and authority, or of my great love. If they knew me, I would free them from condemnation, anger, guilt, and fear. If they trusted me, I would free them from anxiousness over wrong doctrines. If they believed me, I would free them from bondage to cares and concerns of this life, and abundantly feed them with the bread of my eternal life. If they loved me, I would give them my overwhelming love for my precious ones and grant to them my power to cover a multitude of sins and reconcile all things unto my righteousness. But no, these would rather take their stand upon doctrines, creeds, and religious traditions, while still wallowing in futility under the bondage of their sins. My heart grieves for them, my son! They try so desperately to win others to their bankrupt cause by promising future blessings – blessings that they themselves could never walk in. The level of hypocrisy is stunning.

Yes, I make good use of all things, even fear and condemnation. Those of the world rightly fear; they face death. Yet there is none of that in my kingdom, my son! I only draw through kindness and the beauty of my truth and love.

Yes! Here is freedom: Know me! Trust me! Believe Me! Love me! Turn your back on all the ways of the world – the fears, accusations, criticism, condemnations, offenses, traditions, rituals, doctrines, jealousy, worry about what others think, ambition for positions of honor, pressure to conform, anxiousness about the future. Take my hand and walk with me.

Father, why are some so quick to condemn me for my faith that all sinners will eventually be reconciled unto you?

Reveal to me your heart, my Father, in a way that I can share it with them.

That's pretty easy, Father, the second father showed your heart of love and forgiveness. That ought to be obvious to anyone! I know from Psalm 100 that your mercy and loving-kindness are everlasting, and your faithfulness extends to all generations.

But what about all those verses that talk about your terrible wrath against those who work wickedness, about the unquenchable fires of hell, and about how you destroy the lawless one with the breath of your mouth at your presence? Indeed, there are hundreds of verses which say that you will destroy the wicked. For example, Psalm 37:38, which reads, "Transgressors will be altogether destroyed; the posterity of the wicked will be cut off." And in Psalm 145:20 you say, "The Lord keeps all who love him, but all the wicked he will destroy." And in...

Forgive them, my son. They have based their faith upon mental understanding rather than upon my word as interpreted by my Spirit. They know my words but not my heart.

There were two fathers, each with a rebellious son. They disciplined their sons diligently, yet both sons grew only more rebellious and hard-hearted. After dishonoring their fathers with much shameful abuse, both sons were ordered to leave home. The first father, in great anger against his son's deeds, said, "Go, and do not come back. My patience has run out. You shall find the curse of God upon all that you do, but though you suffer in torment forever you shall never find any place of repentance. You are no longer my son." The second father, also in anger against his son's deeds, said, "Go, my son, and suffer the torments which will result from the deeds that you have done. But when your hard heart is broken and you reach the place of true repentance, return unto me. For though it take a lifetime, I shall be patiently waiting, eager to forgive you and to receive you back again as the son of my love." Tell me, which father had my true father's heart?

I am love, my son. The greatest love of any earthly father is no more than a dim reflection of mine. What father is not full of wrath against those things which harm his son? My wrath is a consuming, unquenchable fire, and it shall indeed destroy the bodies and souls that are committed to the evil one. All that satan has fathered and all his works are being destroyed! But though satan is father of many things of flesh and soul, only I am the father of spirits. All that I have fathered shall come to birth as my son. My wrath and judgment against the perversion of soul and flesh is only due to my love, that the spirit of my son be set free to return unto me. The wisdom of my law disciplines in justice until every wicked deed is avenged and every perverted heart cleansed, but I take no pleasure in their torment. My heart continually cries out through the ages, "Repent and receive my gift of salvation, my son! I already paid the price to set you free."

What a wonderful peace I experience in you, my Lord and my God! Especially when I think of your sovereign power, your lordship, and your final goal of ultimate restoration and reconciliation of all things into oneness with you – I just relax in delight in all the gifts of your spirit: your love, joy, peace, patience...

Peace through war, Lord? I don't understand.

I know that you're right, Father. But that doesn't sound much like peace to me.

Who, Me?! I am a peacemaker, but Lord, I'm not a warrior! I'm just a lover...

But how, Lord? What can I do? I can't wield a sword against anyone! I have no position or place of authority on earth.

Yes, my Lord, I submit to bearing your sword of peace. But what about those who refuse to hear and reject both your word and me?

Hold it, my son! I do indeed give you my peace, for I am the God of peace. But it is time for another lesson on my peace. Peace is far more than a blissful state of rest, free from any anxiousness and conflict. In fact, until the end of the ages and my final reconciliation of all things, peace is only peace through war.

I do not come within my precious ones merely to bring peace as the world knows it. Peace at any price is not peace at all, but coexistence and compromise. My peace wields a mighty sword, which is quick to cut deeply, dividing between the soul and spirit, the thoughts and motivations of the heart. As long as there is the tiniest bit of ignorance or hardness of heart left in the universe, my peace is at war.

Remember my first lesson on peace, and know that from my viewpoint in eternity it is all complete, all perfect as I planned from the beginning, and I am at rest. Remember my second lesson on peace and know that the lie is exposed and the darkness is dispelled by the great truth of the oneness of all things in me. Now take my sword and be my peacemaker to a world that needs to see my peace in action. I am the word of reconciliation on your lips. That word is the sword from my mouth sent to smite the wicked with my discipline.

I am a warrior in you, for my peace shines brightest in the midst of the battle against evil. The sword of peace is love. It separates my beloved from the sin that would destroy them.

My word on your lips is all the authority you need, for it is powerful to complete that for which I send it. Be bold to speak it as my spirit prompts you, trusting me to bring it to pass on the earth in my time and my way. Though all the powers of hell come against you, my word through you shall not fail, for you are of me.

They do not reject you, they reject me. The word you have spoken will be as an iron rod of discipline upon their backs until the day they too bow and receive my gift of peace.

Thank you, my Father, for teaching me more about your “Peace that passes understanding.” I rest in your peace and trust you to bring it to pass in my life; though at this point it seems like a lonely and difficult road to walk.

Yes, Lord! I want to receive your vision! Please show me how to make that a part of my everyday life. I sense that your lessons on kingdom relationships, oneness, lordship, and peace were all a preparation for what you are teaching me now.

Father, how do you wish us to live, if not in the cities?

Destroy all the cities?! But Father, why?

Yes, my son, it is indeed a narrow road. So many are both ignorant and slow to learn (because of the hardness of their hearts) that to you it seems like my body is struggling and small. I now open up your heart to see it from my perspective. My body, though young and immature in many ways, is healthy, strong, growing fast, and perfectly pure and holy.

Yes. Recall the story of the tower of Babel in Genesis 11. I altered their language because they wanted to be unified around their tower, their king, their culture, and their religion, for their own wealth, power, fame, and ambition, instead of growing in unity with me and my plans and purposes for my creation. Man’s motive in building or living in big cities is often selfish, to surround himself with luxury, comfort, and security. He rejects my mandate to take dominion over my creation, preferring to hide within his castle in worship of his own gods of prosperity, pleasure, and pride. Stop and think, it is always the cities that reject me first; they quickly put me into an isolated compartment called religion, which has no place in their government, recreation, or commerce. I will deal with modern cities more harshly than I did with Babel, for they have not learned from the example I provided.

You must learn of community. In my time and my way I will destroy all the cities, but do not be fearful. Moving away from the cities is not your highest priority. First, learn to dwell in community with my body, even where you are. Then I will lead you into the community relationships which I have chosen for you.

Big cities are not just places. Like everything else, they are also characterized by attitudes or “spirits.” The “big city spirit” is primarily a misplaced trust in money, goods, and services, isolating oneself from the reality of life by a wall of busyness. The result is a wrong focus on getting what the world has to offer, which is nothing but illusions. That will be destroyed so that all are set free to see what I have to offer, which is all that is real, true, and good.



Are all who live in or near big cities bound by that “big city spirit”?

No. You can live within a city, yet still dwell in my community as you receive my spirit of community in place of that city spirit.

So does that mean that the city structures themselves will be left standing? Can we who live in or near big cities remain living there if we don't partake of that city spirit?

Many city structures will be destroyed as the earth is cleansed of all wrong attitudes and motives. Do not be anxious. I will preserve my precious ones, and in the right time I will lead them away from those areas which are under my judgment. Those walking with me are dwelling in the heaven of my community even if they live within a hell of a city.

The heaven of your community? And a hell of a city? It sounds strange coming from you, my Father.

Heaven and hell have several meanings, but the simplest is this. Heaven is wherever the light of my truth shines so that the glory of my presence is manifest. Nowhere does the light of my truth shine more brightly into my world than in and through my community. Hell is any place where the light of my truth has not yet penetrated to dispel the darkness.

Please teach me how the light of your truth shines within your community.

Adam is one man. In union with Jesus Christ the head, he is the manchild of Revelation 12, whom I have fathered and recently brought to the birth. But he does not yet know he is one. Community is my means of teaching him. It is like marriage, except marriage is exclusive (to portray Christ and his bride, excluding any other lovers), while community is inclusive (to portray the ultimate oneness of all things in fulfillment of my plans and purposes). My light shines through illustrations so that even children can understand. Everything you see is a picture of higher truth. When people see a good, faithful marriage, they catch a glimpse of the love of Christ for his bride. When they see my saints dwelling joyfully together in community, they catch a glimpse of the all-encompassing perfection of my physical body. My body has many members. Each one has different gifts and needs. Yet in the oneness that my spirit of community provides, there is no lack or weakness. Wherever there is a need, a brother or sister is near with a gift to meet that need by my spirit. That is why I said that my body is perfectly healthy, strong, and pure. In your oneness with me is perfection.

Are you speaking of earthly community as I understand it, with families, their extended families, and friends living near one another, sharing, helping, loving, caring, supporting, giving, and trusting one another?

Upon what is your community based, Father? And how is it different from an individual's walk with you?

Who belongs to your community, Father?

Would you please be more specific?

Do you mean that none of the organized "churches" are a part of your community? Do you really want all your saints to come out of church organizations?

Thank you, my Father! I do appreciate you and love you wholeheartedly within each of your precious ones. Thank you for the light of your truth shining in and through us, your community, as we fellowship together and learn to walk in the unity of your Holy Spirit.

Not exactly. Most earthly communities fail because that is their concept. My community is not based on any focus upon one another, and especially not on trusting one another. If you place your trust upon any but me, they will fail you and you will be hurt.

In my community, all the focus, the trust, the sharing, helping, giving, loving and so on, is directed toward me. That is because in my community, all the members recognize me within one another, and minister to me within one another. It is as in a physical body, where all the members support one another, but only at the guidance of the head. My community functions totally by the direction of my spirit through my head, who is Jesus Christ, with no response to the temptations of the flesh.

I am teaching you to recognize them: those with open hearts! I have them scattered all across my earth, a few in every place. I bring them together in many ways. In fellowship they grow in oneness. Whenever you see them you can give and receive something of me, for that is how my Adam matures.

You are thinking of the organized religious institutions who call themselves "churches." The human organization and control results in a mixture of the precious with the vile, which is Babylon, the great whore. My community is higher than that, yet I do not condemn. I simply and quietly call them to come out and move up into my community relationships.

No, no! I want them to come out of bondage to human institutions into the freedom of my spirit. Whenever I move, those who organized their monuments to my previous move are left behind. They build their doctrines and take their stand upon revelations that I have given, rather than upon me. But I have moved on. I am always bigger than all I have given so far. My community is spread all across the earth, moving freely and joyfully with me by the quickening of my spirit, and appreciating me and my love within each of my precious ones.

Good morning, Father! I love you! I rejoice in your awesome victory over death and your wonderful eternal life.

Please teach me more of the nature of your eternal life. How does it relate to Adam, and the breath of life you gave him at creation?

And if you stop breathing into my spirit...?

But I thought that you created man with an eternal spirit?

Eternally dead?! I thought you said that in the end all things would be reconciled unto you in your eternal life!

Why would anyone fear a dead spirit?

Are satan and his demons actually just dead spirits?

Do you mean the process of death and burial of my self-love nature so that I could partake of your life-giving spirit? Did we go through it together?

And good morning to you, my son. I rejoice in your rejoicing, and take great delight that you appreciate the victory of my eternal life.

I am spirit. You are of me, in my image. The breath of life is the breath of my spirit, which I breathe into your spirit to give you life.

Then your spirit quickly withers and dies.

This is a mystery for you, I know, but I speak plainly. Man's spirit is indeed eternal, but without my breath of life it is eternally dead.

That I did. I am the resurrection and the life. Dead spirits are not a problem to me. They are only a problem to those who fear them.

It is natural to fear what you don't understand. Remember our first lesson on life and death? Death is not annihilation or ceasing to exist. Rather it is any form of existence not of me. Those who are not of me are walking in death, as is their father, satan. Death will continue to exist until my final victory over the second death, when I shall cast death itself into my lake of fire, my unquenchable wrath against sin and death. My fire will continue to burn until all those dead spirits are freed from their bondage to sin to return unto me, learn of me, and once again receive my breath of life.

They may seem alive, but to me they are dead, and will remain so until sin's wages are paid and that root of evil – their self-love nature – is totally consumed, utterly destroyed in the lake of fire. This process is similar to what you and I went through together at Golgotha.

Yes. That is the baptism of fire. We went through it voluntarily, you in me. Those who are cast into my lake of fire must go through it involuntarily. That takes a lot longer, in order to burn up all traces of their hardness of heart. But the result is the same: my fire destroys that self-love nature that is opposed to all that is of me. When it is completely gone, I come and resurrect each spirit by my breath of life.

What then is reborn, Father? It seems to me that for a dead spirit such as satan's, when the prideful self-love spirit is completely gone there will be nothing left for your spirit to breath life into!

Father! You didn't answer my question! In fact, you have made it worse! Before, at least you said that your fire will continue to burn until those spirits who were held under the bondage of death are set free. But now you seemed to say they can never be set free!

How then are they saved?

Are you saying that although satan (and those fathered by him) is a dead spirit, and his sinful nature and character will be totally destroyed and perish utterly in the lake of fire; yet you will then somehow resurrect his spirit by the breath of your spirit, and restore it to the good spirit you gave Lucifer at the beginning?

Thank you, Father! The power and love of your eternal life is beyond comprehension!

Hear me carefully, my son! Sin always pays its wage, and that is death. The soul that chooses sin has chosen death. The nature and character that you perceive in him is that of satan his father. He has two natures, but the moment that he breathes in the nature of death, the spirit of life which I fathered within him begins to wither and die. Within satan and his dedicated followers, that process is complete. They have committed themselves to what is evil in full knowledge that they are rebelling against the truth. They cannot be forgiven. Their evil natures are totally bound in sin, and neither eternal death nor eternal torment could ever set them free.

How could a sinful nature ever be set free in my kingdom, where there is no sin? No, my son, all their sins, together with their sinful nature and character, will be totally destroyed, and in my kingdom will be remembered no more for ever. My fire is unquenchable, and not the slightest taint of sin can withstand it.

Have you forgotten the spirit which I fathered in them? Have you forgotten the wisdom and beauty of Lucifer my Morning Star, whom I created to rule with me beside my throne in music and covering praise? Each spirit that I father is equally precious and beautiful to me, as I lovingly mold it from my living word. I have not forgotten, for my great love does not forget! The breath of my spirit never returns unto me empty or wasted. Though he live a thousand deaths in rebellion, hate, perversion, and deception, my love remembers the good work I began, and at the right time my work is completed according to my sovereign will.

Yes, all things shall be restored. I have paid the price; I have won the victory. I won the keys of death and the grave, and I unlock the doors and set the captives free. At the right time, by the breath of my spirit, my servants as well as my sons are each reborn according to my heart's desire from the very beginning of creation. Though it take many ages and many deaths, my will never fails to come to pass.

Thank you, Father, for teaching me about your breath of life. Truly, your breath is my life, now and forever! How does the breath of your eternal life relate to the tree of life in the garden of Eden, or the tree of life mentioned in the last chapter of Revelation?

From your lesson on the physical body, I can guess that you have made provision for your physical body to last far longer than that.

Father, just what exactly is your physical body? Is it just made up of all the saints?

So that excludes all that are still under the bondage of death, still under the power of sin, and still wrestling with that self-love nature. That explains why the scriptures speak of the man-child being brought to the birth at the end of the age. Up until now, there have hardly been any who have had the faith to believe in the power of your righteousness enough to receive it and walk in it. But now your many-membered body is birthed, and is maturing rapidly, in numbers as well as in wisdom and grace. What a joy to be a part of you, my Lord Jesus Christ, and to taste the perfection of holiness that you have provided! Mature me from this glory into all the future glories that you have planned for me, that I too may be a useful body member for your holy purposes! And Father, I in you know this truth is a physical as well as a spiritual reality, but my physical body would appreciate some examples to help it understand, too. Would you share with my physical being how it all fits together?

The breath of life and the tree of life are two very different things. The breath of life is a continual flow from my spirit to yours, which brings life just like the breath of air brings life to the physical body. But the physical body is only made to live for about a thousand years.

Yes: the tree of life. It is a physical tree which bears twelve different kinds of fruit, one each month. I created it for healing and restoration of the physical body. By wisely eating its fruit, the whole body is rejuvenated, so that it will last throughout the ages of ages. My physical body is healthy and strong, full of my "life of the ages" all throughout time.

My many-membered body is my sons whom I have fathered and brought to full maturity in unity with Jesus Christ my head. It consists of all my true saints from all ages: those to whom I have given the faith to die to the self-love nature and trust me totally for their lives.

Yes. The physical realm itself is the example. I enjoy every molecule of my physical body as I use it to express all aspects of my nature and character. All creation is in awe as I unfold the perfect illustration by my sovereign power. Everything, down to the tiniest detail of my physical realm, has it's counterpart in my realm of spirit. As you learn about the physical realm, both good and bad, you are learning about my spirit realm as well. An example is the humble seed, buried in the ground and fertilized with corruption, only to be reborn. Ultimately death and all its corruption shall be destroyed. Out of that destruction shall spring the fullness of my eternal life, as everything I ever fathered is set free to return unto me. All who are set free come forth singing, thankful that they, too, can share my eternity. All who choose life in this age then have the reward of being my tool to illustrate my principle of life for many ages, to those still receiving my life and becoming a part of my body. Just like it is for ministers in the physical, so it is in the spirit: your delight is to be a willing vessel bearing my truth and blessings to my body.

Thank you, Father! I think I understand how learning of your wonderful physical creation teaches us of your own nature and character. And from your lesson on community I'm beginning to see how physical relationships illustrate your spiritual body. But what about sin, sinners, and demons? How do they fit in to all this?

Physical bodies who illustrate the spirit of death? and those who illustrate your spirit of life? Who are they, Lord?

So the molecules of my body destroyed by the poison are illustrations of the physical bodies of people on earth who are being destroyed by the poison of sin... But Father, they are real people! What about their souls and spirits? I can't just consider them as so much refuse!

Father, I understand about my being just a molecule in your glorious body, drawing all my life and worth from your spirit and living only under the direction of Jesus the head. But it still seems that the illustration breaks down when you talk about those destroyed by sin being eliminated like refuse. They are precious ones for whom you died! How can you speak of them in that way?

Harmful things in the physical are pictures of satan and his demons in the spirit realm: dead spirits ministering death wherever they go. Just as eating poison in the physical can result in a dead body, so eating the fruits of evil in the spirit realm can result in a dead spirit. But a diseased and dying body can often be revived by right foods, attitudes, and emotions. Adam is learning to partake of my righteousness, breathe by my spirit, and drink deeply of my living word. The garbage that he has partaken of is being eliminated and thrown out as refuse. Those physical bodies who illustrate the spirit of death are burned up in the trash; those physical bodies who illustrate my spirit of life are given life throughout the ages.

Consider each molecule your human body. If you eat a little poison, many molecules may die, but the body will eventually overcome the poison and eliminate it, together with the dead molecules of the body. You do not consider those dead molecules part of your body! You do not wail and moan at their death! No, they are refuse, and the sooner they are eliminated the better, that the body may be healthy again.

Who are you? You are not separate molecules, but rather you are the identity of soul and spirit that dwells within those molecules. Now, who am I? Who is my Adam? You are still looking at people as separate individuals instead of molecules in my glorious physical body, in which I dwell by my eternal life.

Where does refuse go after it is eliminated? Though you may hold your nose as you take out the garbage, you realize its value in the compost pile. Ash and fertilizer cause the soil to bring forth bountifully! The refuse from my Adam goes into the soil of my lake of fire. Out of that springs new life for my Adam to grow to full maturity. The refuse is neither despised nor loved; it is used for its proper purpose. Those dying in sin have a purpose. When their debt is paid and their purpose is fulfilled, they shall be like well-aged fertilizer, bringing forth bountifully for the growth of my body.

What a beautiful illustration, Father! Now I understand why in your last lesson on life and death you talked about satan as eternally dead, yet about his restoration as Lucifer. So I guess in a sense we are all like that. We each have that wicked flesh nature, which is just refuse to you. It is eternally dead – but still useful as fertilizer. Our spirit nature comes from you perfect and pure but immature, like a seed. It falls into the ground and dies in “corruption” as you said. Yet as in the miracle of the seed, new life then springs forth out of the fertilizer. The new life matures into a beautiful tree and bears much fruit. It is then far more glorious than the original perfect seed. What that means to me is that only the things that came from you in the beginning, all that was once perfect and pure, will be restored. All the rest will only be used, like fertilizer, to mature us and help us to grow. Is that right?

Thank you for that warning, my Father! You are right, I was beginning to think of the flesh nature as not so bad, after all. It is totally evil, through and through, and I know that you hate it with a perfect hatred, even though you do make good use of it. I likewise hate it, reckon it dead, and look forward to the time when its purpose is complete and it is cast into the lake of fire to be totally destroyed forever. But Father, would you explain your use of the term “souls that are perishing?”

Wow! What a lesson, my Father! It will take me some time to digest it! I joyfully receive your forgiveness and your love. I offer my sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving for your wondrous grace in breaking open my heart and filling my soul with your spirit of life.

Very good! Now hear me carefully. There are two kinds of spirit: life, and death. There are two kinds of body, pure, and perverse. But there is only one kind of soul, and it is filled with either the spirit of life or the spirit of death. Those souls that are perishing are filled with the spirit of death from their father, satan, resulting in a perverse body. My wrath rests upon them, for they are like a cancer in the body: dead, and working hard to kill the rest of the body also. In our illustration, study the fertilizer. It is deadly, in the wrong place! It will make you sick or kill you if you do not practice cleanliness. Even so all souls who are filled with my spirit of life must guard against the filthiness of the flesh nature. Do not assume that just because pure fruit grows from it that you can handle it with impunity! Use it, but wear gloves. Be on your guard. Isolate yourself from it, and wash yourself continually with the pure water of my word.

The soul is the vessel I designed to contain your spirit within your body. Your soul is filled with my spirit of life, feeding your spirit continually with my eternal life. Your soul therefore is not perishing, but has the life of the ages, and through it I minister life to your physical body as you learn to walk in the spirit according to my principle of love. The souls that are perishing are those that are filled with the spirit of death. They do not know me or my ways, and are motivated only by self-love. The spirit that I breathed into them at their creation has withered and died, for they do not feed it from my life-giving word. The soul that sins, dies, and in time, that death becomes manifest in his physical body as well. Only a miracle of my grace can break the power of sin and death to set the sinner free to receive my forgiveness and my love.

Yes, my son, you do, just as your physical body joyfully receives my discipline when, for example, I tell you not to eat so much sugar. Be aware of how your physical body responds to my discipline! You are learning much of how your spirit is maturing in my eternal life!

Oh, Father. I thought this lesson was done. But when you said that, I realized that I have not yet understood it. I think I understand the part about two kinds of spirit, the spirit of life and the spirit of death, vying for control of every soul. But it seems to me that it is not so black and white as you put it. You showed me how the souls that are perishing are filled with the spirit of death, resulting in dying bodies as well. And I think you said that the souls that are filled with your spirit of life have the life of the ages, resulting in bodies that are growing more and more healthy, to live with you throughout the ages. But what about those saints who do seek to be filled with your spirit of life, but who still wrestle with the lusts of the flesh, like my craving for sweets?

I don't think you answered my question, Father. At least I still don't understand the answer. Even the saints seem to have physical bodies that are growing older and dying! Where do they fit in?

I do not fear, my Father. I know your final victory is sure. Yet so many saints have died, and they seem to still be dying...

Yes Father, I know it is time for us to mature in your kingdom. By faith I receive your word with all my heart, letting it speak to my own physical body. Though it still seems like death and decay are all about me, I trust you, for I know that you are the resurrection and the life. Let your life work in me and all your sons, that you may receive glory in us.

There is only one spirit: that which goes out from me full of life. But in some it has been cut off from me (the source of life) and is therefore dead or dying. There is no spirit but mine, my son. Those "evil spirits" are spirits which I fathered in love, but which are cut off from life and entered into death. That is why I call them dead spirits; they have no life in themselves, and apart from me all they are and do is death. But all spirits still connected to my source of life, Jesus Christ the Lord, are one in my life. Though immature, all they are and do is life and growth; each step with me is more wisdom, righteousness, and love as they grow my nature and character. Those are the only two categories of people, yet the many are one, for all shall be restored.

You still see the many, with eyes limited by time and space, but I see one body, my own physical body, newly born, growing joyously, vigorously, victoriously. Do not be anxious about souls, my son. There are many souls, but there is only one spirit and only one body. You think of each individual as a separate spirit, soul, and body, but I see only my spirit working through many souls to bring together all the molecules of my body. For each soul, my spirit and my body may be living or dying as the two natures (mine and the "self" nature which is the antichrist, the lie of satan) wrestle for control of the soul. Yet never fear! I have already exposed the lie and won the victory. At the end of time the antichrist is destroyed. Only my "life of the ages" remains.

Not died, fallen asleep. I am life and none who are mine ever die. But my precious ones who fall asleep in the faith, not yet having received the promise, are all here with me, awaiting you to be made perfect. So do not mourn their passing, for now it is time! My spirit has finally finished my perfect work in my son! Gestation is over, my physical body is born. All who have gone before to prepare the way rejoice as they see me come forth! Now it is time for my son to mature in my kingdom. Volume 3 is finished; move on to Volume 4.



# *The Gospel of the Kingdom*

*Volume 4*

**Maturing  
in the  
Kingdom**



Father, what is the most important thing that we can do in your kingdom? Is it worship? Obeying your commandments? Loving one another? Discerning and doing your will?

Yes, my Father! I open my heart eagerly and expectantly for all that you have to say, for your wisdom is one of my greatest delights.

Yes, Father. I see much depth there that I don't think I comprehended before; at least... I have not been walking in it very well. My evaluation is that I still have been functioning entirely too much according to the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. I repent, Father, please forgive me.

I don't understand how that works, Father, but my heart is open to learn. Please teach me to pray.

I don't know how to do that, Father, but I trust you to do it in me. The Scripture says that by your grace I have the mind of Christ, but in the past that has often been superseded (or contradicted) by my own understanding. I honestly do not know how to put aside this fleshly mind that you have given me.

Well, I suppose by some internal drive or instinct that you gave each of your creatures back at the beginning...

And that one exception is Satan, and in him, all of sinful human-kind?

Well, yes, thank you. And what a beautiful, joyous relationship we have, by your infinite grace. But what...

All of those are most important, my son, but the one thing that ties it all together and empowers you to do them is prayer. Listen and learn, my beloved, for this lesson is the most important lesson you have had so far.

First, go back and review the first lesson on prayer. You have had some time to practice. Evaluate yourself on how well you have done.

Even one taste is too much of that fruit. I do forgive you, and cleanse you totally. That phase of your life is now gone forever. You will no longer heed the serpent tempting you to be your own god. In my kingdom I am king and there is no other. Prayer is the key that delivers you from acting in response to your own knowledge of good and evil.

Prayer is not something that I can teach your mind. It is beyond the human mental capacity. Instead, I tune your spirit to my spirit so we are one heart. Your mind cannot comprehend that, so put it aside now and receive my mind.

By faith, my son, by faith! I work; you believe and receive. How does a seed know when to sprout? How does the apple tree know when to blossom? How does a spider know how to build his web? How does a monarch butterfly know where to find his ancestral home? How do the salmon know where to spawn?

Wrong. I tell each of them exactly how and when. They seem to you like simple, mindless creatures, but they have my mind, and it is enough. It is my mind that governs all my creation by the word of my power, and every creature – with only one exception – submits totally, willingly, and joyfully to my authority.

Correct. But prayer changes that. I gave you marriage; you are one flesh with your spouse.

That is a picture of our marriage in the spirit. You were created to be one spirit with me. Prayer is the marriage of our spirits, so that my mind in you is made alive by my spirit.

One spirit with you? Prayer is the marriage of our spirits? Father, that leaves me breathless!

Well, they were the great men of faith, heroes of faith, presented for our example that we may learn to be like them. But...

Yes, I see what you mean. You and you only are worthy of honor and glory. They believed you enough for you to show yourself great through them. But Father, you are confusing me. What does that have to do with prayer?

But Father! You just said that you do hear! If you must turn a deaf ear to whatever is not prayer, then how can anyone ever be saved?

I'm willing, Father, though it sounds strange for me to receive understanding in your mind.

Yes, I understand that, from 1 John 5:15.

No. I know from Psalm 66:18 that if I had regarded sin in my heart you would not hear me, but as the next verse says, certainly you have heard and given heed to the voice of my prayer. There seems to be a conflict there, for I certainly did regard sin in my heart, yet you heard my cry for mercy and forgiveness, cleansed me with the precious blood of Jesus my Savior, and gave me your white robe of righteousness to wear.

Who were Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, Samuel, and so on in Hebrews 11?

Where is the emphasis in your statement? Would it not be better to say that they were men of great faith? Or perhaps better yet to say they were men of faith in a great God?

Everything. What I am teaching you now does confuse the mind of flesh, for it is beyond your understanding. Prayer is the language of faith. Men of great faith are in reality men who have learned to pray. There is no prayer apart from faith. I hear the sinner's plea for mercy but it is not prayer. I hear the baby's cry for help, but it is not prayer. I also hear billions of arrogant religious pretenders daily trying to manipulate me to do their own will in their time and way, and I must sadly turn a deaf ear, for it is not prayer and I cannot hear.

Good question, my son. Men have invented many answers to that question, but no correct ones, for it is beyond human understanding. Prepare the mind of your flesh to die that your spirit may receive understanding in my mind.

First, you know that I always hear and always answer prayer. Always. No exceptions.

Second, you know that I cannot hear the "prayer" of any who have even the slightest taint of sin hidden in their hearts, for I cannot look upon sin. Do you understand so far?

Careful! You are borrowing the religious world's way of explaining what they cannot understand. That is what they call "saved," but it certainly is not saved from sin. They speak of "washed in the blood" and "covered by a robe of righteousness" to hide their hypocrisy of claiming to be saints while continuing to walk in sin. In reality, their salvation is just the beginning of my salvation. I then must wash each of them by the pure water of my living word until I have a cleansed vessel which I fill with my spirit so we can have sweet communion. Finally – that is prayer.

Father, that raises three big questions in my mind. First, is there no prayer in anyone before he is filled with your spirit? Second, is there no sin after being filled with your spirit? (The men of great faith in Hebrews 11 didn't seem to achieve this...) And finally, what does faith have to do with all this, anyway?

I really am trying, Father, but I still don't see how it all fits together. And you didn't answer my three questions.

It means to consider it settled in my mind, now and for all time. For example, I reckon my flesh nature dead and my spirit nature alive unto you.

Yes, Father, I... Oh! Do you mean that I have your thoughts now in my mind?

Changed identities? Do you mean that I am no longer me, but am a part of you?

I see! I see! So prayer has nothing to do with what I do or say or want; prayer is only you, by your spirit in me, thinking, speaking, and doing your perfect will in and through me! Wow, Father! Now I know why Jesus said that no one is good except God alone. It is all you! Anything and everything good is from you, through your chosen vessels.

No, my son! You are still trying too hard to understand with your mind. Let it go; reckon it dead; take my mind as yours. In a human body, each cell does not have a will of its own, but rather all are totally submitted to the mind in the head. Any who eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil become as gods to themselves because of their choice to function by their own minds, apart from me. That is the flesh nature, the self-nature. It is actually a lie, for the mind of the flesh is not ruled by self. It is ruled by the mind of the deceiver, satan. Either you have satan's mind or you have my mind. There is no third alternative.

Prayer is the marriage of our spirits, so how can you pray before you are filled with my spirit, one in my body, functioning by my mind? And since there is no sin, no darkness at all, but only the purest perfection in me, how can you sin after you have become part of me, functioning by my mind? And faith is the heart of it all, my son! Faith is what you are wrestling with right now, determining to just believe my word even though you cannot see it with your eyes or understand it with your mind. What does the word "reckon" mean?

Good. Now, reckon the mind of your flesh, which is actually the mind of satan, to be dead as well, and the mind of your spirit, which is actually my mind in you, to be alive forever.

[Laughing] I have my thoughts in my mind. You are the one who has changed identities.

You were never you. You were part of satan. Through a process which has lasted much of your life until now, you are now part of me.

Exactly. When you were a sinner, I prayed limited prayers in you according to your small capacity for my faith in you. As you matured in my faith, my prayers in you also matured. Now, I pray big prayers through you my son, from my "Father's heart." You can pray great things humbly now, for you know your prayer is me doing my work in and through my body.

Father, that last lesson was truly awesome! Thank you for teaching me who I really am, and for delivering me from the “I that was.” I sense that I am but one of many to whom you have revealed this truth, and that you now have a body of real believers, called the sons of God in Romans 8. Am I right in thinking that it is now time for your sons to be revealed and for all creation to be set free from futility?

I think so, Father. Those phrases both refer to being “saved to the uttermost” of Hebrews 7:25. They talk of that time when even our physical bodies will be redeemed and made perfectly healthy and holy, like Jesus’ physical body was at his resurrection from the grave.

We know from 1 John 3:2 that when Jesus appears we shall be just like him, for we shall see him as he is. Is that not an instantaneous transformation that occurs when we first see him? Or am I wrong to put it into the future?

But Father, I thought you just taught me to claim your promises of salvation from sin and having your mind, and just “reckon it done,” finished, as of right now and forever!

I’m sorry, Father. I had hoped that I was all through with suffering once I entered your kingdom. I figured the sons of God would just unite, receive their inheritance of perfected sinless bodies, do away with the curse, and live happily ever after. Maybe that was just a little naïve?

I don’t understand what you are driving at. Are you saying that it will be a long time and much suffering before we saints receive our inheritance as your sons?

My beloved son, it has been time for almost two thousand years, yet it is not time, for I do not measure time as you. But before I can answer your question more fully, we need to define some terms. Do you understand the phrases “salvation ready to be revealed in the last time,” and “waiting eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our body”? [from 1 Peter 1:5 and Romans 8:23]

Good answer. However, it reveals a basic misunderstanding of how it all comes to pass. I am not a god of the future; I AM. It is too easy to push my promises off into the future with the thought that “when Jesus returns, *he* will right all the wrongs, heal all the diseases, restore everything that was damaged by sin, and rid the earth of all sinners and demons, and you will all live happily ever after.” But that is false. That is just not how I do things.

From my perspective in eternity, it is already done, for I see the end from the beginning. But as long as you have your existence within the realm of time, you must see everything I do as continuous processes rather than as finished or perfected at any single point in time.

That I did, and it is done. Now I explain how it works. Just as I said of Jesus, so I say of you, you are my son, today I have begotten you. [Psalm 2:7] However, even Jesus had to learn obedience through the things that he suffered.

Many whom I have called to sonship in this age are waiting for some god of the future to come and zap them into instant perfection. That I will never do. I do not have robots for sons. For you at this point in the time of your existence, maturing into the perfection of my nature, I make very good use of “time” to work out every detail of my purposes in you.

[Laughing] Wrong focus, my son! Rejoice in all things, even if I do have some discipline yet in store for you. Stop thinking of Jesus’ return as just a future event. Think of it more as a dawning, a glorious sunrise before your eyes.

A glorious sunrise... Do you mean that as the light dispels the darkness, so...

Now I understand why you were talking about the "salvation ready to be revealed in the last time"! You have already completed it, and now you are unveiling it, revealing it to those who are ready and able to receive it. But what about your reference to "waiting eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our body"? How does that fit in?

Well, no, Father, but the sunrise is not exactly the return of Jesus...

I get the picture, Father. We, your sons, are freshly awakened, and haven't yet learned to discern your truth from the dark deception that fills the world...

Yes, Father! The dawning of your kingdom! The beginning of your rule of righteousness and peace through your sons! I see it coming, for the signs of the times are all around. But how soon? When do we receive "our adoption as sons, the redemption of our body"?

Yes! So Jesus, my living word, unveils truth before your mind, dispelling ignorance...

Think again of the dawning. The sun shines brightly through the darkest night, but to you it does not appear so, for your perspective is limited. And so my beloved sleeps, while I tinge the eastern horizon with a thousand shades of indigo, vermillion, crimson, fiery brilliant colors all. Did ever an earthly king enter his domain with such royal splendor?

Just a picture, my son, but what a picture! Look there! My beloved awakes, early, early, with the dew still damp upon his forehead. While the rest of the world still sleeps the sleep of blissful ignorance, my beloved is drawn by a brightness on the horizon. He leaps to his feet, his mind still filled with tortuous nightmares of the past, straining his vision to discern between dream and reality. But the dawn has not yet reached him, and his imagination plays pranks with the dark forest around him, every branch a snare, every tree a monster, every noise an enemy lying in wait.

Look again! My beloved kneels and lifts his hands and face toward my throne. Unseeing, yet he trusts me, and I rejoice to bring forth the dawning with great haste. He arises, fresh from my presence, to face the dark world around him. But lo, the sky has brightened! All the dark shapes and sounds which he so much feared now begin to appear for what they really are: a garden, wide and wonderful, for my beloved to explore. As the dawning grows brighter and brighter until the full day, the penetrating rays of the light of my truth search out the deepest hidden secrets of my creation and exposes each thing for what it is. All lies and ignorance flee before my sun!

As the sky grows brighter, so my beloved awakes to my purpose for him. As he realizes my purpose in each small area of his life, I work in that area to accomplish my perfect plan. In that area, even if in no other, it is done; I am come; we are one; you are my son.

It is done? You are come? Do you mean that there is no “second coming” of Jesus in the clouds with power and great glory like it says in Matthew 16:27, Acts 1:11, Revelation 1:7, and many other places? It is just an inward coming within the hearts of your sons?

Well then, are there two “second comings”? One within your sons, and one for real?

You transcend time and space? Does that mean that you “are come,” present tense, to all who will receive you and to whatever extent they will receive you, from all ages past and present? Why, that implies that by faith we can receive all your promises right now, even the redemption and restoration of our physical bodies! Is that your intent for us in this age? Has that always been your intent throughout all the ages?

Wow! That is truly awesome, my Father! I do believe, yet, Oh my Father, how inadequate I feel! It seems so impossible that I...

Yes, Father. True humility boldly submits to your perfect will being worked out in my life, in your perfect time and way, for your glory.

Wrong. Scripture is true. Every prophetic word shall be fulfilled. At the appointed time Jesus shall indeed come with great power and glory, bringing with him his reward for each man’s deeds, whether they be good or evil. But why must you insist on living in the future?

No, no. [Laughing again] You forget that I transcend time and space. For those who are still asleep, I awaken them with awesome power and glory at the end of the age, where I shall hold them accountable for their laziness, ignorance, and selfishness. But for you whom I have awakened, that day shall not take you unaware! In each of you my precious ones I am come already, though in many different times and ways in the various areas of your daily lives. You shall not be surprised to see me face to face, for with pure hearts you see me now. In each area that you see me, you are even now changed into my likeness (my very nature and character) and you do receive your inheritance as my son, total redemption and restoration in at least that area of your life.

Yes! I am infinite, eternal, and present everywhere at all times. Though I work differently from age to age within time, yet at all times throughout all ages I have always made myself available to those whom I have called. Yet in this the final age of rebellion, it is time for my son to stand mature as never before, to destroy all wickedness by my breath in his mouth, to cleanse the earth of the curse of sin, and to restore all things to my original design.

Careful, my son! My faith in you does not stagger in unbelief! You have not gone this way before, but do not limit me by your own inexperience. Let there be no false humility rising up to prevent any one of my sons from boldly walking in the fullness of my provision. Remember our lesson on humility, my son?

And now is my perfect time. Rise up now, my beloved son! Receive me totally in every area of your being, body, soul, and spirit! You are my fulfillment of all my promises!



Father, why am I in pain? I thought that I was about done with suffering. Didn't you say (in Revelation 21:4) that in your kingdom you would wipe away every tear from our eyes, and that there will no longer be any death, or mourning, or crying, or pain? For what am I being disciplined now? I didn't know I did anything wrong!?

But Father! It hurts! How is it possible for my first response to be joy and thankfulness? And how can you call pain one of your finest gifts? I don't see it mentioned as one of the gifts of the spirit: love, joy, peace, patience...

Do you mean that pain is also a spiritual thing? I remember from your first lesson on suffering that you also suffer with your precious ones; does that mean that you also feel pain?

And I thank you most gratefully for that, my Father. But isn't that suffering about over now? I mean, Jesus' sacrifice on the cross is a completed work, and once we all enter the kingdom...

Yes, Father. I do want to learn of you, and to share your own nature, but I didn't know...

Oh my son, my son. Go back and review the previous lesson on suffering. Pain is a good thing, not a thing to sorrow over. Pain is one of my finest and highest gifts to my physical creation. There is indeed pain in my kingdom, and will be until all things are restored. But it should be borne with joy and anticipation for what I am doing. For you to fully enter my kingdom in this respect, you must learn right first responses of joy and thankfulness in pain.

Joy and patience both include my gift of pain. You have looked at pain as a purely physical response to a physical problem. Even then, it is good, if your response is to fix the problem rather than merely to stop the pain. If you put your finger blindly on a hot stove, are you not thankful for the instant surge of pain which I give to assist you in pulling your finger away fast? And after that are you not also thankful for the continuing pain which demands that you care for the wound properly until it heals? Yet pain is far more than physical sense.

You are confusing the sense of pain, which is purely physical, with true pain: the suffering, the agony of soul and spirit, which is not at all physical. As a spirit I cannot feel physical pain, nor do I have any need of it, except in you, my physical body. All the suffering that I do feel is what I gladly and joyfully bear for, in, with, and through you, my beloved son.

Exactly! Once we all fully enter the kingdom! Don't forget my lost sheep scattered on the mountains, or my goats in the furnace, or the bondage of my abused creation! Anywhere suffering exists, I suffer. In the very last age of time, when every person, every animal, bird, fish, plant, bug, yes even every angel and devil has been fully redeemed from sin's curse and instructed in my ways of righteousness, then my suffering shall cease. Until then, you are called to be like me; I will teach you now of my nature that you may share my suffering.

Stop, my son. Don't you know that the voice of my spirit speaks clearest through pain?

Oh! Yes, Father, I guess I knew that. But I thought that was just due to the hardness of men's hearts. When the sinner can't hear you in any other way, you send him pain until he finally stops what he's doing to listen to you.

I'm sorry, Father, but I don't understand.

Yes, Father. Philippians 3:10 and Colossians 1:24. I always wondered about those passages but they don't help me understand very much. Please open them up to me by your spirit.

Excuse me for interrupting, but what was the one exception when you did not share in the spirit what Jesus bore in the physical?

What suffering then do we bear with you?

So this pain I feel is not a punishment for sin, but a discipline toward holiness, maturity, and restoration to your perfect plan, and I bear it not just for myself, but also for all of creation. Thank you, Father, for the privilege of sharing your sufferings for all creation, and your glory as all is reconciled back to you. I do joyfully partake of your nature of self-sacrificing love, and rejoice in both the pain and the blessing.

Yes, that I do, but the sinner knows nothing of my nature. He thinks the pain was sent only to turn him around toward me to receive healing and finally get relief from pain. Little does he know that my spirit is also in the pain itself.

When the apostle Paul talked of the fellowship of my sufferings, and of filling up that which is lacking in Christ's afflictions, he spoke of things beyond his own understanding as well. But now it is time to understand.

Fellowship is interrelationships within my body. When any one suffers, all who are in fellowship with that one also suffer. But all the suffering of my whole creation, yes every last little ache or pain, has been willingly, joyfully borne by my firstborn Son Jesus the Christ, who is the only one in all my physical realm able to bear it. He and I are one in a perfect marriage of physical and spirit: everything He bears in the physical I also bear in the spirit (with one exception). All who would be one with us must share our suffering, both in the physical and the spirit, until it is finished.

When Jesus took upon himself in the flesh the sin of the world, I in the spirit could not bear it, for I am holy. Thus I had to turn away, and my agony of suffering in the spirit, as well as his in the flesh, were both multiplied many fold. That was the only time in all the ages that we were separated. It shall never be again, for we are one. You do not have to bear the suffering of sin with us, for it is finished and shall never have to be borne again.

The sufferings of joy, of longing and hope of restoration, of patient eagerness, of visions not yet fulfilled, growing not yet mature, weakness not yet made strong, flaws not yet perfected... This is truly the essence of life, the fulfillment of destiny, the ecstasy of doing and being what you were created for, knowing that because of what you bear this hour, my Plan of the Ages is an hour closer to completion. Fellowship in my spirit is sharing in the joy of my sufferings until all is fulfilled in perfect unity with me.

Oh my Lord Jesus Christ, my heart is so full of love for you that, of all the many important tasks before me, what I want to do most is to just sit at your feet and worship you!

But Father, how can I be of any value to you in accomplishing your will on the earth, when I am overcome with love, praise, and worship?

Well, to worship in spirit means to worship with my whole heart, I think. And to worship in truth means to worship with faith, with no deception, hypocrisy, or double-mindedness.

Oh my Lord! How could I miss it?! You are Spirit! You are truth! So does that mean that worship in spirit and truth is worship *in you*?

Ahh! I see what you mean when you say that worship benefits me, not you. I am the one needing changing! From your perspective in eternity, all is complete, perfect, needing no benefit at all. So let me re-phrase my question. How does my spending my time in worship help me to be useful to actually bring forth your kingdom on the earth?

Thank you, my Lord and my God! I worship you continually as I go about the daily tasks of my life, so that others will see you in me, and give thanks to our Father in heaven.

Do you mean that even an insignificant thing like deciding what color of socks to wear in the morning can have eternal significance?

How can my aligning myself with your choice of socks for the day be a defeat for satan?

I rejoice that you do, my son. You have only begun to taste the joy that fills me when we share together like this in love and fellowship. Don't be anxious about having time to finish what I give you. My sovereign will is always done in and through you in the right time.

Value to me?! Worship benefits you, not me. It lifts you into my presence and tunes your heart to mine. Think about what worship is. True worshipers are those who worship me in spirit and in truth. What does that mean?

No. That is close, and I appreciate your wholeheartedness and faith. But you have missed the main issue. Who is truth? Who is Spirit?

Yes! In your oneness in me you partake of my nature and character, and are filled with my Spirit. That is true worship. When you come to just sit at my feet and worship, you are changed into my image, my very likeness.

Your benefit to my kingdom is not so much what you do as a member of my body, but rather what you are as a bearer of my nature. As you become like me, you shine with the light of my own glory to a dark world, thus bringing forth my kingdom from within you and dispelling the darkness all around you.

Your attitude of true worship makes every task you do profitable for my kingdom! Even the simplest task has eternal benefit, when it is done in the joy and delight of my presence!

Yes indeed! All of creation is watching to see how my lordship is manifested in my sons! Every decision you make in the attitude of worship, trust, and submission to my lordship is a victory for the righteousness of my ways as well as a defeat for the evil of satan's ways.

Each act of worship brings satan to his knees in that specific area of your life. He trembles at your submission to me and determination to find and do my will, even in the small things. Review again the lesson on righteousness.

Yes, Father. You said that your righteousness is your life lived in and through me, resulting in my being and doing exactly what is right at all times and in all circumstances. But what does that have to do with worship?

You're right, my Father. From my limited perspective, my vision of your Plan of the Ages seems fantastically great, but I know that from your perspective in eternity, my vision is way too small. Please enlarge it!

Wow! I can relate to what you are saying, but just barely. Even awesome is far too small a word! Just beginning to comprehend the greatness of your Plan of the Ages gives me a heart full of worship in everything I see and do, and every situation I encounter. But alas, it seems too big for me to really comprehend! Will you please give me an example to help pin it down?

My Father and my God! What else can my response be but to bow in humble worship?!

You remind me of Ephesians 4 and 5, which talks about our unity in you and the actions and attitudes that result. But it never occurred to me before that those chapters were talking about worship! My prayer response now and always is that my entire life, down to the smallest detail, may be an offering of worship and praise unto you, my Father and my God!

When my life is lived in and through you, I receive glory in all that you do, for you shine with my righteousness. That is true worship. When you are aware of my presence, actively participating in my plans and purposes, that is worship. Your perspective of me is too small!

You have tended to look at some things as too insignificant to be of value in my kingdom, such as which clothes to wear, how you comb your hair, or when you trim your nails. But I have perfect control over each individual hair, each fiber of thread in each piece of cloth, and each cell that grows to form your fingernails. A single cell is insignificant to you among the billions of cells in your body – you cannot even tell when it is born or when it dies – yet it all happens only at my command. I lovingly direct each cell, each molecule, each atom, each particle within each atom, each force, action, or reaction, of everything in the entire universe, so that without exception, everything functions exactly according to my plan.

A good artist is careful of the tiniest details of his work, for it reflects upon himself. I am painting a picture to display my nature and character to all creation. I am perfect in all that I am; therefore my picture must also be perfect in every detail. You are a part of my picture. Worship is my display through you, in the full radiance of my perfection, all those details of myself that I am painting in you.

Live in humble worship! Bowing to worship my greatness is but the first step. When you recognize and accept my absolute lordship, my sovereign authority, my loving concern and care over everything in my creation, down to each speck of dust, then you can accept my lordship over your own life, too, down to the simplest and most routine action, thought, or motivation. The result is prayer – continual communion with me; aware of my presence; one with me in faith, in spirit, in nature and purpose; one body with me in Christ Jesus. This perfect prayer releases true worship, as my life in you shines to display my full glory.

Father, that is just overpoweringly awesome for me to consider myself as your painting, displaying the perfection of your glory to all your creation. I feel like Isaiah must have felt when he saw you in glory on your throne, and said, “Woe is me, for I am ruined, because I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips, for my eyes have seen the king, the Lord of Hosts.” [Isaiah 6:5]

“Here am I! Send me!”

What can I say, my Father? You know the weakness and unworthiness of this flesh far more than I. You know my absolute inability (apart from Jesus Christ) to ever measure up to your holiness. You are holy, holy, holy – multiplied beyond my comprehension. Though I were to meditate on your Holiness the remainder of my days I could not fathom the extent of it.

I thought that love was your identifying mark!

Well, if you do not ask that I display all of your holiness, then what are you asking?

Thank you, my Father, for this picture of your infinite holiness! I do bow to your lordship of each moment, and I trust you to perfectly display every aspect of your holiness through the many-membered body of Christ. I see many little sparkles of holiness, and I trust you to blend us all together to shine with the full splendor of your *holy, holy, holy* nature.

My beloved son, when you receive a fresh glimpse of my glory it is right that you fall on your face before me in reverent awe and holy fear. But it is no longer right that you be held back by the sinful nature from displaying my glory to my needy creation. Be aware of that sin nature only enough to refuse to give it any trust, any glory, any place at all in your life. When you reckoned it dead, my angel touched your lips with a burning coal from my altar, and I proclaimed you forgiven, as with Isaiah. What was his response when I asked, “Whom shall I send, and who will go for us?” [vs. 8]

And that I have, my son, for truly those who cannot see me, do see me in you. You are my light bearer, carrying the perfect standard of my holiness by the power of my great love.

I did not ask you to display *all* my holiness, for in truth, the universe could not contain it. My holiness is the very essence of my being. To fully comprehend it is to be God. Everything that flows from me, every aspect of my nature and character, is firmly founded upon my holiness. To discern if something is from me, simply look for my identifying mark: my holiness. If it is not there, or worse yet, if you sense a mixture of the holy with the profane, then watch out, for satan crouches at the door.

Love is but an extension of my holiness. The infinite holiness of my character demands that I love all that I have fathered, but love in and of itself does not at all demand holiness.

From my perspective in eternity I am at rest, enjoying the perfect painting through which I display myself to all creation. The many rich colors of my holiness, wisdom, power, and glory, blended with every aspect of my nature and character, perfectly display all that I Am. But from your perspective in time, you have only *now*, a moment in time to acknowledge my lordship. As you are aware of my holy presence and my sovereign leading in what you think, say, and do in the *now*, I display a tiny glimpse of my holiness to all around you.

Thank you, Father, for that lesson on your great holiness! I will do my best to display your holiness to those around me who aren't saved...

I use that term to distinguish those who see you and have a personal relationship with you from those who can't see you except perhaps through us. It is a fairly well-understood term, Father. Most people recognize it as describing those who have been cleansed and forgiven of sin, and who have eternal life. It is contrasted with those who are unsaved, who are still in bondage to sin and condemned under the law of sin and death.

I understand, Father; it seems that the words "salvation" and "saved" have been cheapened by all the false religious interpretations of your holy word. How then should I speak of those who, ahh... don't yet know you? Should I just call them "hard-hearted" because they resist your Holy Spirit in unbelief and thus refuse to get to know you? You spoke of them like that in your lesson on open hearts.

And what about them, Father? Are they also, as you said, "yet being saved?" When you awaken their understanding, do they then begin to repent of the death that has been their existence, and turn to you for life?

Stop! The harder you try to display me to those around you, the greater is your failure, for only I can display myself through you. Your trying to do it only results in pride and hypocrisy. Take your focus off yourself and how others see you! Keep your eyes on me. Standing in my presence you are transformed into my image, so others recognize me in you. Now, what do you mean by the term "saved"?

Your words are right, but your thought is still bound in religious conditionings of your past. Salvation is a good word, but it is too easy to divide up my creation into "the saved" and "the damned." That conjures up images of being rescued from a stormy sea while others drown, or finding water in the desert while others die of thirst. But both sea and desert exist only by the word of my power, and I am intimately involved in even the tiniest detail of either of them. No one is lost or hidden from me, though he may dwell in the deepest hell.

That is a good way, though there are none who know me fully. In that sense, all are yet "being" saved. Those who with open hearts are learning to know me, have life, for it is my life in them opening their hearts to feed on me and grow in spirit; they are "saved." The hard-hearted rebel against knowing me. They have no life, for knowing me is the essence of life. Therefore they are doubly dead: firstly they are bound in sin; secondly they have no part of my spirit life within. That is torment, hell if you will. Their torment is then multiplied many times as I begin to awaken their understanding to the goodness they have despised and forsaken for their own hollow pleasures.

Ultimately, yes. Death is not a problem to me. Even Jesus suffered death, as I turned away from my Son under the burden of the world's sin. But death shall be destroyed, annihilated, to never again darken the joy of my creation. Then all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. Finally every heart shall open up to receive my salvation and every tongue shall confess the absolute lordship of Jesus my Son.

Father, there are several passages in scripture which talk about the Lamb's book of life. What is it, and what significance does it have in the kingdom?

I understand, Father. That's because salvation is only by faith and not by doing good deeds. When was the Lamb's book of life written? Or is it still being written now?

That sounds like a contradiction, Father.

What happens to those who are blotted out, or those who were never written in the Lamb's book of life? Are they never to have a part in your physical body?

Yes, in the lesson on time you said that in the ages to come, as we mature in your kingdom, we will work with you restoring right relationships to all life forms. Is this the means you use to turn the many alternatives into one?

So does the Lamb's book of life right now list only those who are part of the firstfruits?

The lamb represents my Son, Jesus, slain as the sacrifice to pay the law's penalty for sin. His book of life is an up-to-date list of every person who believes and receives him by faith. It is a "book of remembrance" of all who bear my name. I also have five books of judgment, for each of you shall be judged and rewarded according to your deeds. But the Lamb's book of life is all about faith: my gift of faith by my sovereign choice for each of my precious ones.

It was written in the beginning of time, for when I first expressed myself into the realm of time I predetermined the full extent of my physical body. Yet it is still being written, for children are born into my kingdom daily, while others who taste of my life then despise it and are blotted out of the book of life.

As you partake of my eternal life, you will see that there is no conflict between my works which are completed from the dawn of time and your manifestation of them within time.

Many truth-seekers naïvely consider only two alternatives: all who are mine spending forever resting in my presence, while all those who belong to satan are tormented forever in hell. But in truth there are as many alternatives as there are people, for each has different gifts and weaknesses, each makes different use of what he has, and thus each receives different rewards or discipline. Yet there is only one conclusion, for all shall bow to my lordship, each in his time, according to my sovereign Plan of the Ages, that I may be all and in all.

Correct. You who have been perfected in Christ Jesus in this age are just the firstfruits of my harvest. My son (my physical body) seems small now, for he is just a child. But in ages to come he will grow to fill my creation!

Yes. It records all who have received life in Christ Jesus from all ages past and present. Yet in another sense it also records those who are yet to be saved in the ages to come, for I see all times from my perspective in eternity.

That doesn't make sense to me, Father. If the book of life records all who will ever be saved then what about those who are mentioned in Rev 20:15? There you say that all who are not found in the book of life are thrown into the lake of fire?

What about forgiveness? Is there no erasing from these universal data banks?

So, at least from our time-based perspective, their names are not yet listed in the Lamb's book of life. I suppose then that they must be listed in one of those five books of judgment you mentioned?

And finally those who see you but reject your spirit's call and commit themselves to satan and his ways are thrown into the lake of fire.

What happens to the rest of the truth-seekers, those who are not yet filled with your spirit or walking in your righteousness, but who do at least heed your warnings and refuse the mark of the beast?

I will teach you later about the lake of fire. First you must understand about how records are kept in my universe. At the beginning of creation, there were many things that I wove into the very fabric of time and space. One of these is a recording system. Everything that happens, good or bad, every thought, deed, motivation, action, reaction, or circumstance, is recorded in the universal data banks.

Yes and no. Once done, a deed can never be erased. But an evil deed can be covered, or forgiven for the sake of true righteousness. This is atonement. At the end of time, all shall be atoned for, but this is a process. Until atoned for, every evil deed lies open and bare for all who are in the spirit realm to see.

That is correct. They are the books of the damned, the ignorant and hard of heart, the foolish and lazy, those enslaved in paganism, and those who merely lack understanding. Many battles in the heavenlies are fought over their names! Do not assume you know their destiny! Many of those will quickly believe and receive me when they behold my glory. Then their names will be erased from the book of judgment and written in the Lamb's book of life, along with the names of all my precious treasures who have willingly received my full atonement and are now filled with my spirit.

Yes, together with many truth-seekers who refuse to heed my warnings though my saints and receive the mark of the beast.

When in great glory and beauty, Jesus comes for his bride, many terrifying signs will appear in the earth and the heavenlies. Many harden their hearts and place their trust in man. But those whom I have reserved for myself repent and allow me to purify them through the fires of the great tribulation. They refuse the mark of the beast and are persecuted. Many are martyred for my name's sake. Though not a part of my firstfruits, yet I save them through the fire. They shall become a bountiful harvest for my kingdom at the end of this age.



They are then added to the book of life?

Yes, and invited to the wedding feast.

Invited? You mean they are not part of the bride of the Lamb? [Rev 19:7-8]

No. The **bride** of the lamb refers to all who bear my name, display my character, and walk in my righteousness as overcomers in the ages of sin. This is the 144,000 of Israel, my chosen people, my firstfruits listed in the Lamb's book of life. This is the manchild of Revelation 12 and the five wise virgins. This is my holy city, the new Jerusalem, my physical body, and my perfected saints who follow me wherever I go. I keep them safe in the fires of tribulation, for they dwell in my secret place. You recognize them by witnessing the victory of my righteousness in their lives, radiating from their open hearts to all around them.

Thank you Lord Jesus! Thank you for giving me the "high calling of God in Christ Jesus" [Phil 3:14], the call to be a member of your bride. What about those who are not perfected during this age of sin, but who do love you and seek after you...?

That is the other offspring of the church – the woman who bore my manchild. [Rev 12: 17] I call them my **brothers, sons of my Father**. These are the five foolish virgins who accept my atonement for sin but not my deliverance from sin. They do keep my commandments but do not know me intimately. They look for my returning, but have not the oil of my spirit in fullness within. When their sin is atoned for they are written in the lamb's book of life, but not as firstfruits. They are truth-seekers from all ages who die in little faith, believing only for a future salvation from sin. Yet they shall be purified through the fires of tribulation, for though they are unworthy, my irresistible love and grace compels them to come to me.

So, they are not part of the bride of the Lamb, but are still ultimately part of your physical body on earth – aren't they? Wait! I thought your bride is your physical body on earth, with you as the head – "one flesh," as it says in Genesis 2:24. Is your body more than just your bride? Will any from your body be lost? Will any of them be cast into the lake of fire, which is called the second death? [Revelation 20:14]

All will be saved. It is your terminology that is confused. Strictly speaking, the body of which I am head is only my bride. She is just a small sub-set of the multitudes of my human family. That includes my brothers – everyone adopted or born into my family – the family of Israel. After my wedding they will love to come to my holy city to learn of me. I in my bride will train and discipline them, that they also may believe and receive all that I promised in Christ Jesus. Thus my human family matures to rule my creation with me. Not one member of my human family can ever be lost; all shall overcome, for I've already overcome in them.

From Revelation 20:4-6 I understand that all those who have died as overcomers in Christ will come back to life in the first resurrection. They shall learn to rule over your creation in this thousand year kingdom age now upon us. But who do they rule over? Just the animals?

What is the difference between them and the firstfruits? Since they all will be a part of your physical body - er - your human family in the end, it seems like no one would want to be part of the firstfruits. (No one besides myself, that is, and I feel very odd in this sometimes.)

Well, what about right now? Shouldn't I be encouraging others to want life in you just as much as I do, so that others also will have the joy of becoming part of your firstfruits?

But Father, it seems tragic that some people are so close to the kingdom, and yet seem to harden their hearts on just one point...

I do trust you, Father, but I still don't understand. What you said here and in the previous lesson seems inconsistent with the parable of the sheep and the goats [Matt 25:31 ff] or the great white throne judgment. [Rev 20:15 ff] They imply there are only two categories for all time: paradise with you for those recorded in the Lamb's book of life, or the lake of fire with satan for all those who aren't. But you have been talking about three categories: your bride, your brothers, and others who are not part of your human family at all, who I must assume are the "goats" of the parable.

Do not despise the commission I gave you to rule the animals. It is an important part of your mission of the ages. But more important is the myriads of truth-seekers who were not able to fully receive my salvation from sin in this age. Each one needs to be disciplined and shepherded toward the green pasture of life in me. This is your first job in the age to come.

Out of their great love for me, the firstfruits enter my physical body through the willing death of their self-nature during this life. All those whom I have called, want this with all their hearts, just as you do. In ages to come, all others shall want life in me as they see my glory and joy shining through my firstfruits.

Yes, but with care! There are many deceiving spirits. You must carefully discern the spirits to know who actually are mine. Review your lessons on the open hearts and your mission. I give you now the eyes to see and the heart to love each one with whom I am connecting you in my body. Be one with them, in faith that I shall complete all that I have begun.

Do not be anxious! They are not for you to judge. Some are mine, but not connected to the same part of my body as you. Others are not really part of my body, but are still part of my human family as my brothers. Yet others are not part of my human family at all, no matter how pious they act. Trust me in this.

Correct. The "goats" are those who behold my glory yet still rebel. They cannot be forgiven. They must pay the penalty for their own sins in the lake of fire. The "sheep" unknowingly serve me within my family. These are not yet saints (who do know whom they serve) nor have they yet received my full salvation from sin. They are truth-seekers: all those who tried to do their best with what they have, although bound by ignorance and the deceptiveness of sin. At my returning, they will receive me with open hearts. So my mercy and grace triumphs over judgment, as they too enter my kingdom as my brothers, part of my human family.

Wow, Father. You're right, I assumed that the sheep were saints. I never thought to reconcile that with Revelation 19, which clearly speaks of our wedding with Jesus first, followed by the judgment of the nations. I understand now about the myriads of truth-seekers who are not firstfruits, but who are recorded in the Lamb's book of life only by virtue of the fact that their hearts are open to learn of you and receive your salvation in the ages to come. Thank you for explaining that second category – your brothers! Will you teach me further about the third category: those “goats” who remain recorded in your books of judgments, and who are thrown into the lake of fire which is the second death? [Rev 20:10-15]

But Father! Not even to pray for them? Is there nothing that can be done for them until that “age of the ages” you mentioned?

Yes, my Father! I most certainly am thankful and very open to your lessons of wisdom, and I always shall be! But do you mean that all who choose the ways of death shall spend all the ages of time in the lake of fire, and never have a chance to experience the joy and freedom of being a part of your physical body?

I see! Thank you my loving Father! It is a great encouragement to know that even in the garbage pit, you have not forgotten your love for the rebellious, unrepentant sinners, and that at the right time they will be set free from the pit so they too may become one with you in your life of the ages. I do appreciate your great hatred against the evil self-nature, but your boundless and eternal love for even those who have been enslaved by it, is greater by far! You are worthy to receive all glory!

Do you recall in our lesson on love that I said that my love reaches even to satan? Think about it. In love and mercy I patiently wait, giving him life, strength, and the freedom to continue his course of rebellion and deception. But how long do you think will be the time of his punishment for all the suffering he caused, until he fully realizes the consequences of his actions? Truly I say to you, hell was created for satan and all who are one with him, and my unquenchable fire will not cease until the age of the ages, that great age toward which all ages focus. You are not to pray for them or try to help them. The sin of their willful choice against my Holy Spirit can never be forgiven but must be totally annihilated by fire.

Do you pray for garbage? The sin nature and all it has fathered is garbage; the lake of fire is the garbage pit. Review “Life & Death” and “Spirit, Soul, & Body.” The sin-nature, all sin, suffering, bondage, fear, and death itself shall be annihilated in the lake of fire. That is why I created it. As you smell the smoke of their burning through the ages, be thankful for my mercy and grace, and learn your lessons well!

No. You do not understand those who have chosen the ways of death. Most sinners are neither one with satan, nor dedicated to his purposes; rather they are ignorant, deceived, and slow of heart to believe. Many are mere children, who have never had a choice except what was forced upon them. Many whom you think have chosen ways of death will repent and bow to my lordship when, in the light of my glory, they see the error of their ways and the righteousness of mine. But those who see my glory and deliberately harden their hearts, refuse to repent, and refuse to give me the worship that is mine, will indeed be cast into the lake of fire. They also are judged according to their deeds. When each one's rebellious self-nature is finally burned up, then his true self (which I fathered) will be willing and able to bow to my lordship. Thus in the ages to come, all whom I fathered shall be free to experience the joy of becoming my servants.

Father, would you please describe to me what it is like in the lake of fire, so I can use it as a warning to those who may be headed there?

Father, I'm still not clear on the difference between hell and the lake of fire.

In the first lesson on heaven and hell, you said that the various levels of heaven and hell in the spirit world are the reality of which everything in the physical is but a dim picture. Now I understand that in that spirit world, the first levels of heaven or hell portray deeper realms as well. Heaven portrays the highest heaven, where you dwell in matchless splendor. Hell, where your grace is limited, portrays the lake of fire, where your grace is totally withdrawn.

Father! That sounds very strange! You are talking about those in the lake of fire, yet you say that you are their life and light and peace and so on. I thought the lake of fire would be a place of death and darkness and strife and confusion, with no peace at all!

You're right, my Father. Even though you shield me from the full horribleness of it, still I feel sick with only the thought of the place. Thank you for showing me that your infinite love and mercy reaches down even there to sustain those poor souls in death until they are ready to receive your life. But Father, how could any intelligent, rational person ever choose such a place, anyhow? Are they so deceived?

I will talk about it, but realize that no words can adequately describe it. However, some horror movies have come close to portraying it. People who enjoy watching horror movies may learn that their strange fascination for terror is but a symptom of their choice of hell.

Only a difference in degree, or in fulfillment. The lake of fire is the fulfillment of every hell ever chosen. Every sinner experiences hell, that is, existence apart from my grace. But the lake of fire is the reality only dimly pictured by all those experiences of hell.

Almost. My eternal grace reaches out in a limited way even into the lake of fire, but I am withdrawn so that it cannot be perceived. Even the most evil spirit in hell is sustained totally by my grace. But here is the fire of it: only in the lake of fire does each sinner fully realize how much he depends upon me. I am his life, his light, his peace, his health and strength, his clarity of thought, his happiness, his perception of all that is good and pleasant.

Is there still a conflict in your mind, my son, between my intense hatred of sin and my love of the sinner? The lake of fire is indeed a place of death, darkness, and despair, because the fierceness of my mighty wrath against all sin rests there in full measure. I shield you so that you cannot comprehend even the tenth part of the horror of that place. My infinite holiness is violent in demanding strict vengeance to the last degree of even the slightest sin. However, my infinite love is greater than that.

Those whose hearts are hardened to serve the self-nature may fight me and refuse to repent even under unimaginable torment in the hells of their own choosing, because of the fierce pride of their "independent-self" nature. But in the lake of fire all that is wiped away. The myth of the independent self is exposed for the lie it is. Then the real horror begins, as they realize in truth that all they ever wanted, worked for, longed for, cried for, fought for, is only to be found in me whom they rejected.

If that is only the beginning of their horror, how does it end?!

So even though they are in torment, they will be a blessing to your creation, for we shall all learn from them!

When will be the right time, my Father?

And then what happens when one does open up his heart to repent and receive your grace? Is it just as if he were repenting in this life? Does he then have to believe in Jesus Christ, receive atonement for sin by the blood of Christ's sacrifice, and then be perfected in faith in Christ as his savior, just as he would have if he had repented while on earth?

Yes, Father! So then as each sinner comes in through the door who is Jesus Christ, we all will joyfully welcome him into Paradise!

Why, that's easy, Father. It is the ages upon ages of rejoicing and worshipping in your presence, learning your wisdom and ways, and experiencing the fullness of your nature and character! Everything in the lake of fire – separation from you, torment, fires of regret – Paradise is the opposite! We will drink of the rivers of your delights from your fountain of life! In your presence is fullness of joy and at your right hand are pleasures forevermore!

On judgement day all minds will be opened and all things brought to remembrance. As you feast in my presence, they will be reliving each moment of their wasted lives, except this time with the full awareness of both the tragic consequences of their selfish deeds, and the blessings they might have received instead if only they had but chosen me and my ways. Through them, all creation will learn the wisdom of choosing my ways and the total folly of choosing any way other than mine.

Yes! More than that, my great compassion and mercy in you shall reach out to them in the depths of their despair, and at the right time you shall lead them to my atonement.

You will know. With each one, it is different, for my judgment is just. No one will suffer one heartbeat longer than is required for the full punishment of sin, the fulfillment of the law, and the developing of both repentance and the open heart to receive my grace.

There is no atonement for willful sin; it must be punished. But you are right about trusting in Jesus Christ as savior, for there is no other way for any sinner to come to me. But the lake of fire burns up his self-nature – it is totally destroyed – so that when he does accept faith in Jesus Christ, he is humble and teachable, ready to enter my presence and learn of me.

Yes, my son. Again, your words are right but your thought is limited by past conditioning. We do indeed all welcome him into Paradise with great joy. But what is Paradise?

[Laughing] You know not the tenth part either of the lake of fire or of Paradise! You see from your limited perspective of looking up to me, but do not forget my original design for you. Paradise is you in me and me in you, rejoicing as I fill you my temple with my glory, power, beauty, and authority, so I may rule through you, my physical body. In you I shall restore all of creation throughout all the ages, so that in the end I in you shall be all in all.

Father, in your lesson on the Lamb's book of life, you spoke of at least three things, the Lamb's book of life, the five books of God's judgment, and a record of our deeds in your "universal data banks," woven into the fabric of creation. Are there other books too?

Everything? That must include the animals! Does what animals do also have any eternal significance?

I always thought that animals were created just to be a blessing to us. It never occurred to me that you had any blessings in store for them!

Yes, Father! When I look from an animal's perspective, I can see that. I am reminded of many verses of scripture which talk of how you care for the animals and birds, giving them their food in due season, and not even allowing one of them to fall to the ground without your permission. I used to think you said that just to teach us not to be anxious!

How do we govern them in righteousness?

Yes, Father. But what is their proper place? I see all the killing, the hunter and prey, the disease and death; it seems that many animals can only survive by preying upon others! Are their entire nature and physical characteristics going to be transformed?

That recording system which I built into the space-time fabric of my creation is far more extensive than you know. Everything is fully recorded, not just people and their deeds. From my viewpoint in eternity I can see all of my creation as if I were any point in time.

Yes! Their sin is but foolish ignorance rather than willful rebellion (even for serpent and dragon!) yet they also were bound under the curse during the age of sin. Their simple lives and inevitable death are illustrations for all to see of the far-reaching consequences of sin. But even under the curse, many animals are still true to their created nature. They are not greedy, egocentric, or proud. They obey me faithfully, as I use them for my kingdom. They shall receive many blessings in ages to come.

Stop and think about your love for animals, and about your special care and appreciation for the pets I have allowed you to care for. That is my nature in you loving them. I use you as my channel to bring my blessings to them, because I also care for them.

Look in Isaiah 34. I also have a special book for animals, which gives to each its sphere of influence and place of habitation. Now my covenant with animals is being restored, and shall be a tremendous blessing to you in this kingdom age now begun. You shall learn much from them, as you humbly obey my command to govern them in righteousness.

Humbly! You see the perversions caused by the curse of sin. Now determine by my spirit what is right, and speak my word to set them free from the curse so they can take their proper place in my creation, in peace and joy.

Yes! By the word of my power through my sons. Their food shall be grasses and weeds of the field and vegetation of the forest. Their proper place is mankind's willing servant and beloved friend, helping man to weed, prune, trim, and cultivate so that the entire earth may become a beautiful garden as Eden once was.

Lord Jesus, please teach me more about your sword. I know that your sword is your word, for in Revelation 19:15 it is coming from your mouth to smite the nations, but...

Thank you Lord. Yes, that fits with Psalm 149:5-9, which says that your godly ones, the saints, have the high praises of God in their mouth and a two-edged sword in their hands to execute vengeance on the nations.

Yes, Lord. I do trust that everything coming from my mouth is always, absolutely, only from yours as well, for you have total lordship over my mouth (and all of me). So, now that we have that all straightened out, the question I wanted to ask is from Matthew 10:34-39, where you talk about not bringing peace to the earth but a sword, to set even family members against one another. What does that mean, and how am I to relate to my own family by the right use of your sword?

But what about my family, Lord? I have known people who used Matthew 10 to justify divorce and rebellion within their family, by saying that you don't expect them to remain together with others of lesser (or even just different) spiritual dedication than themselves. It does seem to say that your sword is sent to set family members against each other and even to make enemies of one another.

Stop, my son. Do not assume that my sword is just coming from my mouth, for you are my mouth. My sword is my word in the mouth of my faithful and true many-membered son.

Yet it is not wrong to say that my sword is coming from my mouth. We are one body. I am the head and you are my mouth, my feet, my hands; yet we are one. My sword comes from my mouth even as it comes from yours.

Review my lesson on love, my son. Recall that my sword is love, but it has two edges: loving discipline for my saints and punishment or judgment for the sinner. What better place than the family to learn how to use my sword? Many think that a sword is for war and love is for peace, but I say that there is neither love nor peace without my sword. My sword hates all evil. It disciplines my sons and cuts away anything that separates my beloved from me. My sword discerns between the soul and spirit and penetrates to the thoughts and intentions of the heart. Every hidden unrighteousness is laid bare and exposed to my light before the awesome brilliance of my fiery sword.

No, my son. I told you, my sword is love. If you use it properly, it never separates families but only brings them closer together. If one loves parents or children more than me, he will tolerate within them the seeds of their destruction, that sinful self-nature. But as you love me first, I will show you how and where to use my sword to expose that self-nature, that it may be cut away and put to death. Yes, this makes enemies, for the self-nature does not want to die. No one is able to kill his own self-nature, for the self-love which I gave him prevents it. Therefore I nurture my saints within families, so each member of the family can be my tool to operate upon one another. Like a skilled surgeon with a sharp scalpel, I carefully cut away all the gangrenous flesh, so that my sword of love brings forth my mature son in righteousness. Thus my godly families are the basic building blocks for my kingdom, as they speak the truth in love to one another.

Thank you, Father! I am beginning to really appreciate the operation of your sword. I see that it leads to the death of the self-nature and the life of righteousness. But that brings up another question, Lord. You said that family members use the sword upon one another. But verse 38 says that we must take up our own cross and follow you. How does that fit?

Conversely, do the hard-of-heart resist your sword by trying to defend themselves, thus feeding their self-nature instead of denying it?

But Lord, what if my brother or sister uses your sword wrong, and starts cutting away at something in me that is actually righteous? This seems to happen a lot to me, when close friends or relatives criticize and condemn the very truths that you have been giving me!

How do I tell the difference between your sword and satan's? Do I recognize them by knowing that satan's sword always has his trademark of anger, hate, and fear, while yours has only your trademark of love?

Lord, it sounds like you want me to just wait there and take in all the garbage that some ungodly person living in sin is throwing at me!

I see! So even if I am being condemned or criticized, I do not retaliate or react on the human level. Instead I listen in prayer for all that you might tell me through it, and humbly submit to you within my brother or sister. That prepares me to speak only by your spirit, using your double-edged sword correctly in hatred of sin, yet in great love even for the sinner. Thank you, my Lord and God, for the sword of your spirit, your holy living word!

Recall your lesson on open hearts, my son. You have learned to keep your heart open to my correction and discipline. Now learn to keep your heart open to my correction and discipline through any vessel I choose to use, especially the members of your own family. The open-hearted saint humbly submits to my sword in the hands of a brother, sister, parent or child. That is how he learns how to deny himself and take up his cross. Taking up your own cross and following me is willingly and humbly submitting to me within any person or situation I allow to come into your life.

Correct, and in so doing they reveal who is lord over their lives: satan masquerading as self, keeping alive the lie of the self-nature.

You always submit to my sword, no matter how ungodly the one using it. In doing so you are submitting to me. But your submission must be with careful discernment, for satan has a sword, too! You cannot determine which sword is being used by judging the person, you must look to me by my Holy Spirit.

Trust me! I can tell the difference! You cannot, for the same word may use both swords. A harsh word from one who is hateful, angry, fearful, bitter, or selfish may disguise a living word of true love, sent by me to reveal areas of weakness or immaturity to help you grow.

Yes, wait, but not passively! Wait in intense prayer in the spirit, until I inspire you to do something else! The battle is not against flesh and blood! Do not cross verbal swords with one another merely because you discern that your brother is using satan's sword! Love him enough to hear him out; then wait on me for the right response. Your humble submission to me in this is your preparation to manifest my victory against satan. So, filled with my spirit, you speak only the right words at the right time by the awesome power of my love. Thus my fiery sword of love, even in all its wrath and hatred of evil, is only used to open your brother's eyes and heart and set him free.



Good morning, my Father! Thank you for a good night's sleep. My sleep was especially peaceful and refreshing last night. I awakened eager to seek and to do all your perfect will on this Sabbath day. What would you like to do through me today?

Well, I dwell here in this house that you have provided. I have a measure of peace and safety from outward enemies, and I certainly trust in your faithfulness to protect me from evil spirit enemies. I am still looking forward to the heavenly home that Jesus has prepared for me, but for now I am content with...

But Father, it sounds to me like a lot of that comes right from scripture. Doesn't it speak of golden streets, white robes, crowns, and...?

Please, Father, share with me a more correct interpretation of all those passages.

But my Father, didn't you create each of us to dwell within your heart, and you within ours? I have sensed for a long time that my real home is in my Father's heart, and since you dwell in highest heaven, I have always longed to be there forever with you, worshipping and serving you with everything I am and have.

You are welcome, my son. You are a wise son, for you have come with a willing heart to hear your father's instruction first thing in the morning. I gave you an especially refreshing sleep last night as an illustration for today's lesson. It is about home, from my perspective. You are home, now, in perfect comfort, safety, peace, and joy. Do you know what I mean?

Stop. You have slipped back into the religious world's way of thinking. Home is many things on many levels, but it is not that "mansion up in the clouds of heaven where the streets are paved with gold and the people fly around with angel's wings wearing white robes and gold crowns, and strumming on harps for all eternity, with never a worry, a pain, or a care."

That is a self-centered, lazy interpretation of the scripture. It has very little if any basis in fact, even though the words sound the same.

Lets start at the beginning. I am God. I dwell in highest heaven and anywhere else I choose to dwell, and I answer to no one regarding my home. Let not the pride of man dare question my choice to dwell in perfect peace and joy within the heart of a poor, humble, and even ignorant child. You, however, are a created being. Your home is wherever your creator places you right now, and you will not find happiness, peace, or security anywhere else.

Yes, my son. Now you have reached up to the highest and best meaning of home. At the end of time you will indeed fully live in my heart in ways now beyond your comprehension. Then I will be all and in all throughout my creation, as it is in eternity. This brings me great glory, and I gladly receive your worship in saying it. However, you have left the realm of present reality for a realm of future glory beyond your understanding or your capability. In doing so, you deprive yourself of the full appreciation of your present dwelling place. One who dies "to enter his heavenly home" misses the blessing and joy of continuing to walk, work, and war with me on earth.

But Father, what is my present dwelling place? I live in a world filled with sin and distorted by the curse. How can I ever be at peace here? Even Jesus said that He came not to bring peace but a sword. Do you really want me to feel at home here?

Yes, my Father. I do remember, and I think I am beginning to understand. You created us to live on this earth and subdue it, to rule over the plants and animals and tend the garden as your caretakers, your representatives. We have never really fulfilled your command, have we?

But what about heaven? Isn't heaven with you intended to be our real home, and this earth just a pilgrimage along the way?

I don't mean to be quoting scripture back to you who authored it, but what about passages that talk about the heavens passing away with a roar, the elements melting with fervent heat, the earth and all its works being destroyed, and a new heaven and a new earth in which righteousness dwells?

So then you plan to reclaim this earth and somehow reconstruct it, restore the plants and animals, and rebuild the garden to be our home as you intended it all along?

So the "new heaven and new earth" are...

Oh! Yes Father. The renewed heavens and earth are to be our home for all of time, ruled by the bride of the Lamb from Jerusalem, as in Revelation 21. But is that actually a physical reality? I thought that chapter was symbolic of heaven! It says that there is no need of sun or moon, no sea, no night, no sanctuary...

You are speaking to your creator, my son, and this is the Sabbath. Remember, once again, back to the garden I planted to be your home. I open your mind to recall now the perfection of peace, beauty, comfort, joy, and purest pleasure, when even from my perspective everything in all my creation was "very good!"

Correct. But I do not condemn, for indeed sin has made it very hard for you. But I am not a god who changes plans or denies my own word. This earth is your home, for I made it so. Now you must reclaim what was lost and restore what was damaged, for satan shall no longer pervert my original intent and design.

You are in heaven with me now and always as you dwell in my presence, but you shall spend the ages of time in your home on this earth.

Do they conflict in your mind with passages that talk about the righteous inheriting the land and dwelling in it forever? There is no conflict in my word, my son. The heavens and the earth shall indeed be cleansed by fire as every trace of satan's works are destroyed. But those who believe that I will walk away in disgust and start again someplace else, have in their hearts accused me of failure, and satan of victory. No, my son! Mine is the victory!

We, my son, we! I work through you, my physical body. In the beginning I made your home anew. In your immaturity you opened a door to its destruction. But that is part of my victory, for I have used it to mature you. Now we rebuild your home together, that you may appreciate and better know how to care for it.

Nothing is new. Use "renewed" or "restored."

Yes. You cannot now comprehend the glory of the home I have prepared for you! Home is a very big word: it is the physical realm finally blended in perfect unity with the spirit realm, with my sons able to travel in joyous freedom throughout every dimension of my creation... You have just begun to come home, my child.

Father, please teach me about authority and submission. I know that Jesus was under your authority, totally submitted unto you, while on this earth, so your authority was manifest through him in great power and glory. Even so you teach us to submit unto one another, and especially unto the “shepherds after your own heart” that you have given “to keep watch for our souls.” But for some reason the power of your authority doesn’t seem to be coming through them as it did through...

Wow, Father! I didn’t realize that you felt so strongly about it. Will you please teach me what you really mean in all those verses that talk about submitting one to another in the fear of the Lord, and about the shepherds after your own heart that you give us to feed us on knowledge and understanding? [Jer 3:15]

How do I know the false shepherds from the members of your body, the one true shepherd?

What about the true shepherds, Father?

Hold it, my son. Your human logic is leading you down the wrong path. Let’s start back at the beginning. Trust me to lead you up the path of righteousness. You were conditioned more than you realize by the “shepherding” doctrine, which says that you must always be accountable in this life to another person (or group), preferably one more spiritual than you or who has had more religious training. This is a lie from satan, most serious because it is a seductive distortion of truth. By this lie many are manipulated and controlled to this day. Having lost their true freedom in Christ, they find themselves in bondage to the doctrines and traditions of men. They suffer under their human gods, unable to hear my voice or know my will, unable to receive the fullness of my Holy Spirit or the power and authority of my living word. Slaves to the letter which kills, by human logic they eat only fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and know not my Holy Spirit who gives life.

Yes. Read Ezekiel 34 and 37. The shepherds after my own heart are in reality only one shepherd, my servant David. In this passage he represents the many-membered body of my son the Christ, the only good shepherd. Those who are one in Jesus the head, walking in my righteousness by the power of my Holy Spirit, qualify to fulfill this passage. They do not really lead my sheep, but rather my own heart through my head Jesus leads through them.

The false shepherds are those who have never received my victory over the sin in their lives. Though many are seekers, they are afraid of what they may find, and cannot bear to sell all that they have to possess the kingdom. They offer promises that they themselves have not received and teach theological theories that have never been proven in their own lives. Thus they are like the blind leading the blind.

Shepherd, my son. Singular, not plural. My son is one in Christ. If you think of him as plural, you risk following only men. My good shepherd is Christ, my many-membered son.

Will you give me some practical guidance as to how to know them, er, him in them, so I will know to whom I should be submitting in order to be under proper authority?

What about the pastors and teachers who are given for the building up of the body of Christ (from Ephesians 4:1), or the leaders who keep watch over our souls (from Hebrews 13:17)?

Well, uh, I guess you're right. I didn't know it was an improper question, as it did seem to be from your word. Those who asked me that question were accusing me of not submitting to the authority of a local church. I see now that they were taking the parts of the Bible that fit their doctrines, and imposing them on me, while ignoring the rest. They do believe in evangelists, but they didn't mention apostles and prophets because they believe there are none left, since the original thirteen apostles died and since the holy Bible was "completed," as they say. They don't believe that you speak apart from the Bible, anymore.

Okay, Father, granted that those who refuse to believe in apostles and prophets have denied the power of your Holy Spirit to speak to and lead your people, but what about those who do believe in them? What is the purpose of your five-fold gifts of ministry, and how are they all supposed to work?

My son! Have I been with you so long and yet you don't know me? Review the lessons titled Discerning the Body, Open Hearts, Mission, Pure Hearts, Kingdom Relationships, Oneness, and Lordship. To be subject to one another in the fear of Christ means to *not* be subject to fleshly human wisdom! It means to discern Christ in them and to be subject only to *him*. You are under proper authority only when you recognize and submit to my own authority within my body, whether through a mature saint, or a babe, or any part of my creation, and receive me with an open, humble heart.

[Laughing] The persistence of your improper question reveals that it did not originate with you, but with those who would place you back under bondage. Why do you single out pastors and teachers, but leave out apostles, prophets, and evangelists?

Ask those false pastors and teachers why they are not submitted to the apostles and prophets I sent them! My young shepherd-son is now complete, sufficient for every need. Those who relegate portions of my word to the past or the future but deny it for the present are guilty of crucifying me afresh within my holy ones who walk in my living word. Without apostles and prophets, the pastors, teachers, and evangelists are incomplete, like a body torn asunder and left to die. If you were to submit to such a one you also would die with him – die the death of religious rituals or traditions devoid of the life and power of my spirit.

It is for the equipping of saints to my service, working together in mutual submission to me within each other, for the building up of my body, until all my chosen ones mature into the perfection of my many-membered son. Those who build their own kingdom by demanding submission to their own authority, traditions, and doctrines are false shepherds, feeding themselves at the expense of my sheep. The true shepherd lives for me among my sheep, my life in him shining with my righteousness and directing my sheep only to me.

Oh Father, that last lesson on shepherd leaves me with so many questions. From my limited perspective your body seems so fragmented. I can't always recognize the apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, or teachers who are really one in your body, and when I do recognize a few here and there, they don't seem to be one with the others I know! You say that your shepherd-son is complete and sufficient for every need, but I see so many needs and so few that seem to be meeting them. Also, you seem to flatly condemn the "shepherding" movement, even though you admitted it is a seductive distortion of truth. Where does the truth fit in? What about those who don't really care about having people submit to themselves or their own religious assembly, but are only concerned that everyone must be submitted somewhere, lest they fall into doctrinal error (doctrines of demons). It seems like they have a valid point. There have been dangerous cults started by someone going off by himself and hearing voices or receiving visions which turned out to be terrible perversions of the truth. They ended in many people being hurt.

Father, would you please explain that for me? I never really understood the verse that says, "The fear of YHWH is the beginning of wisdom." [Proverbs 9:10] What does fear have to do with it, anyway?

But what does that have to do with wisdom?

Whom do you fear, my son? My sheep walk freely in my pasture without fear, for they trust me, their shepherd, to lead them safely. If I am not capable of keeping you from error, who is? Do you think you stand more chance of avoiding doctrinal error by submitting to leaders who are themselves enslaved to the doctrines and traditions of men? How many of them ever learned to hear my voice within the mental exercises of studying theology and religious traditions? How many of them dare to step out in faith and challenge even one fundamental tenant of their religious heritage? Even when my Holy Spirit calls loudly, asking them to just leave their religious immaturity behind and walk with me, what is their first step? With me? No, it is to check with some elder or commentator, as if I couldn't possibly say anything to them that I have not already revealed to the saints and prophets of the past. Do you understand the result? They are in bondage to the past, to immature doctrines or interpretations of scripture, and they won't let me lead them on. How do they expect to enter the kingdom without my living word? It is as if I have died and all they have left is a 2000 year old book! My heart aches for them! I must teach my people how to fear me, that you may receive my wisdom.

When you fear me aright, you no longer fear the future, or what man may say or do. When you fear me correctly, you are at peace in your soul. Then are you able to really hear what I say, with the trust that fully receives it.

I am your wisdom, by my spirit. I lead you by my rod of discipline and my staff of gentle guidance. I use means, tools. I speak through the Bible, through others, both good and evil, through circumstances, animals, plants, rocks, the weather, the stars... I use anything that will help my precious ones to hear. My sheep do hear my own voice through these pictures, because my spirit is within them interpreting what I say to their awakening heart. My Holy Spirit is the great and wonderful counselor sent to safely lead you, my son, into all truth.

I know, Lord, that you are the good shepherd and the great counselor, but haven't you taught us to also seek confirmation? And your word says, "Where there is no guidance the people fall, but in the abundance of counselors there is victory." [Proverbs 11:14]

Yes, Lord Jesus. Teach me how to fear you properly, that I may always hear you clearly and correctly however and through whomever you speak.

Thank you my Lord. I know with my head what lies beyond the door of death; but thank you now for revealing it to my heart. I do trust you for the future, and no longer fear death or the unknown. But what about those few who have died and returned to life, yet still do fear?

Yes, my Lord, and thank you for that! I am sad for those who still live under the burden of that fear, but I am thankful for the way you use it to start them seeking after you. And I am even more thankful for how you deliver them of that fear when they finally believe and receive your salvation. Are there other fears?

Yes, Lord! And now that you are lord over every area of my life, what is left to fear?

I taught you to seek confirmation only so that you may learn to know my voice, and not be deceived by all the evil spirits vying for your attention. If you know my voice, then you know in your heart that what I am saying is truth. Why then should you seek confirmation from those who don't know my voice? That breeds confusion and doubt. Your translation of Proverbs 11:14 is faulty. The original says, "In the absence of wise counsel the people fall, but safety is in the great counselor." I am he; my counsel is wisdom and truth. I do counsel through others, but you must learn to fear me properly in order to discern my truth from among all the partial truths and falsehoods.

First, I must cleanse you of all wrong fear. Fear of death and fear of the unknown are the first to go. They are the same. You have read of people who have died and returned to life; ask them. Almost without exception they will say they no longer fear death, because they have been beyond it. Thus it is no longer unknown to them. I cleanse you of all fears of death and the unknown by revealing to you what lies beyond the door: ages of ages of peace, love, joy, and fellowship with me.

They have all tasted a deeper fear: the fear of punishment or torment. This is the terror hidden deep within the souls of all who have not received my forgiveness, the cleansing power of my blood, and the awesome healing and restoring power of my love. You have, my son, so that fear is but a faint memory.

Yes, many: fears of loss, injury, or disease, of being left out, of missing some of the joys of life, of losing friends or loved ones or even possessions... I deliver you from these as you learn to receive my lordship over each area of your life. In any area of life in which I am lord, you cannot fear loss, for you know that all things are under my lordship anyway. If there is loss in an area, it is my loss, not yours.

Don't forget the fear of man. It is the worst of all, for you are a slave to whomever you fear.

But Lord, if I am slave to whomever I fear, and you teach me how to fear you, does that make me your slave?

It almost sounds like there are two different kinds of fear! If fearing you aright makes me your love-slave which sets me free from the bondage of fear, then one kind of fear must result in bondage, while another kind of fear results in freedom.

Well, I suppose I would. After all, I would never know how he would receive me...

Yes, and so the fear of man is a snare, a trap, as you say in Proverbs 29:25. I am beginning to see the contrast between the fear of man and fear of you, founded on total faith and trust in your faithfulness.

Yes, my Lord and my God! For me, that holy awe and reverence towards you is not really fear at all, but rather it is the deepest and most respectful reverent love: perfect love! Now I understand how perfect love casts out all fear. Being your love-slave really does set me free!

Yes and no. It makes you my love-slave, yet the very love that binds you to me sets you free from the bondage of fear. Thus as my son you have perfect freedom in all good things throughout my universe, even as I am free. There is no greater freedom. You will understand as I teach you to fear me aright.

No, fear is fear. But there are two different kinds of foundations. The fear of man is based upon the foundation of unbelief. But to fear me aright you must be founded firmly on faith. Consider the most imposing, wise, and authoritative man on earth. Do you fear him when you are bid to come into his presence?

Exactly. Your fear of him is based upon lack of faith, or unbelief. You cannot fully trust him to be righteous, loving, kind, knowledgeable, honest, or considerate in all things, because you know that he is human. Furthermore, you cannot trust his motives toward you; he may have a reputation as the most selfless public servant on earth, yet you cannot trust him to be so for you. You do not really know, beyond any shadow of doubt, that he is trustworthy. And so you stammer and sweat, and make promises you're not sure you can keep, and say things you wish you'd never said, and hide things you wish you had the courage to tell him, and even twist the truth to make yourself appear in the best light, hoping that he doesn't notice the discrepancies. Your very fear of him makes you his slave, to be manipulated at his whims to do his bidding.

Yes! And when you trust me totally to be who I say I am to you, then your fear has a firm foundation. This is the only right fear. You know my love, mercy, faithfulness, truth, goodness, kindness, justice, righteousness, and holiness all are without limit. You know that I can never violate my own nature and character, and you have learned to trust that I have only good in store for you. Thus your fear founded on faith reaches ever higher into a holy awe, respect, and reverence toward my infinite greatness, glory, power, and majesty.

Oh my Father, what a joy it is to realize that I am at home in the heavenlies with you even now, on this earth that you have created for me. Thank you for delivering me from fear and anxiousness about the future. Thank you for enabling me to be at rest and to enjoy all that you are doing in and through me now. I am reminded of your two lessons on Sabbath Rest in Volume One. I thought I understood them then, but after your lessons on home, shepherd, and fear, I see I am just beginning to understand them. Did I not fully enter into your Sabbath Rest back then?

My sin?! Oh Father, I'm sorry! Please forgive me. I thought I was all finished with sin when I first entered into your kingdom. Will I always be growing to uncover new faults and weaknesses, new areas of the flesh nature that must be slain afresh? Is it then true what is taught in modern religious circles about the process of sanctification from sin taking an entire lifetime? Are we never totally freed from sin until we die and go to heaven?

Then why did you say...

Yes, Father. I know you are right. And I know I will always fall short of your infinite glory, so I will always need to walk in the attitude of humble repentance for that. However, many times recently I have acted on impulse or out of habit, without waiting on your Holy Spirit for guidance. Please cleanse my heart of my iniquity and teach me to walk continually by your spirit. Will a time ever come when I will have no faithless deeds left to repent about?

Welcome, my beloved son, to my Sabbath Rest that I prepared for you from the foundation of the world. In Volume One you did enter fully into my kingdom, my Sabbath Rest, with no possibility of turning back, but my child, you have grown! Your eyes are more open. Your perspective has broadened. You are now more one with me in body, soul, and spirit, and my nature and character are working their way throughout your whole being. Things which before had been no problem to you became doubts, questions, or fears in the light of my revelation. It is time once again to leave your sin behind and enter into my rest.

No, no. [Laughing] That is a doctrine based on truth but devoid of spirit. Sanctification, like growth, is indeed a process, but freedom from sin is a present reality for all who walk by my spirit, for they dwell in the heaven of my presence. All who deny this have denied my name, and are still walking in the futility of their own darkened intellects. I freed you from sin when you first allowed me to dwell within you, for I cannot dwell where sin lies.

As you grow, your concept of sin also grows. Nothing is sin until I reveal it to you. When you were young, sin was simply and clearly defined as any breaking of the law. As you grew in grace, you learned to love my law, and sin was to you anything not done by faith. In learning to walk by faith you learn to know me, to become aware of my holy presence within you and of my sovereign leading in all aspects of your life. Now sin is anything that you do apart from my Holy Spirit's leading, any area in which you fall short of my glory.

Yes, my son. Very soon. For now, welcome once again into my Sabbath Rest. And there is nothing wrong with impulse or habit, as long as your impulses and habits are also guided by my spirit! This is indeed my rest, for you to continually be so in tune with my spirit that your first impulse in any situation becomes your unwavering habit of looking to my spirit to determine what is right.



Father, that passage in Hebrews 8 intrigues me, where you talk about putting your laws into our minds and writing them upon our hearts, so that we won't have to teach anyone about you, for all shall know you from the least to the greatest. Will you please teach me how that works from a kingdom perspective?

Well, I suppose you needed something to hold the universe together, something to keep it all functioning in an orderly fashion. Besides, as you told me in my first lesson on law, your law is a reflection of your own nature and character! You couldn't create anything without putting some of yourself into it, so your law gets "built-in" to everything you create!

Will you give me an example, Father?

Wow! Thank you, Father! So I should be thankful to you even for those laws that I wish I could violate, like the law of gravity when I fall, or the law of pain when I hit the ground too hard, or the law of infection when I don't take care of a wound properly...

I see! So when I got sick, I should not have bowed my head in despair, wondering what sins I was being punished for. I should have gone to you in thankfulness and rejoicing, eager to learn the wisdom you had for me!

Yes, gladly, my beloved son! It delights me that you have come to love my law, for my kingdom is built upon law far more than you are aware. I will teach you many things about my law as we walk together through each realm of my kingdom, but first, why do you think I gave my law in the beginning?

That is good, my son. Your focus on myself is right. It will usually keep you out of trouble. But in this case, you have missed my point. I gave my law for your sake, not mine. I could run the universe in any way I wanted, but for your sake I chose to run it according to very precise, orderly principles, which I teach you so you can come into in harmony with me.

The evil one wants you to believe that I say, "Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy" just to restrict you from doing what you want for yourself. In reality my law of the Sabbath is a tremendous blessing for all who heed it, for only in the keeping of the Sabbath is a sinner's spirit and soul restored so that he can learn to know me and my ways, and enter into my rest. Likewise with each of my laws: the deceiver says they are a bondage, but only in keeping them do you find real freedom, happiness, health, safety, and peace. So you see, my laws are expressions of my love to you.

And as you thank me for the consequences of breaking each of those laws, you learn of my wisdom hidden within them. You learn of the importance to my universe of the consistency of gravity; without it, all would be chaos. You learn to mature under my discipline by my application of just the right amounts of pain at just the right times. And you learn how to properly care for my temple of your body by the sicknesses that I send to teach you my principles of health and hygiene.

Yes! As you become aware of the goodness of my law, you discover that every painful result of violating it is simply a loving lesson, sent to mature you and to lead you higher into my kingdom, into my own nature and character.

But Father, I don't think you ever answered my original question about putting your laws into our minds and writing them upon our hearts.

That sounds like a long and painful process! When do we get to the place that, "... all shall know you from the least to the greatest"?

Yes Father! I rejoice that you do prepare me, for that is truly my heart's desire! But what about until then? Must we be satisfied with only partial knowledge of your law written on our hearts? Must we continue to exhort one another to, "Know the Lord"?

Oh, yes Father. You taught me about how you, as the master builder, delight in the detailed craftsmanship of each temple you are building in your New Jerusalem. You said that you also enjoy the building process, for even within the foundation you see the capstone.

I see what you mean, Father. I know that you could teach it all through me by your Holy Spirit. But I do realize that I still have much maturing to do. Thank you for teaching me to appreciate the process of learning wisdom.

Yes, Father, I do! And I will continue to love your law with all my heart, for it is indeed my meditation day and night. I see it everywhere and in everything! I do thank you for each insight, even the painful ones. In each one I see your love as a Father, as well as your wisdom, power, glory, and righteousness!

Yes, I did. Wherever your treasure is, there is your heart. As you catch the vision for the benefit that my law is to you for your own sake, it becomes your treasure. When you thank me for even the painful discipline of my law, recognizing that I discipline you out of my great love for you, I use your thanksgiving as my pen to write that law upon your heart.

At your wedding with Jesus, you shall be one, with open, trusting hearts seeing and hearing one another according to the relationship that Jesus has had with me from the beginning. At that time every lesson that any of my precious ones has ever learned will become available to all, as you share all that you have and are in perfect oneness. I prepare you for that now.

When perfect oneness comes, all that is partial is left behind. Though from my perspective in eternity it is already accomplished, from your perspective in time you must wait until the wedding. I know that it is hard to wait as the time of the wedding draws near, but do not forget that I enjoy the process as much as the end result. Do you remember the lesson on building the kingdom?

And teaching you of my law is like putting the floor, walls, and roof upon the foundation. Consider all that I have taught you regarding the Sabbath in the last few years. Do you think you are ready to pass my final exam? Are you ready to teach it to all my creation?

As I give you little insights of my wisdom, you treasure them, hide them in your heart, and thank me for them. They become part of you. Thus whenever you encounter other members of Jesus' bride, you pass along the blessings!

Here is a little jewel to add to your treasure: my law of the Sabbath is the pivotal command between the first three, relating exclusively to me, and the last six relating to your brothers. It joins the two great commandments [love God / love your neighbor] by training you in love relationships as you enter into my rest.

Father, I thought we were finished with that lesson on law until you dropped that little jewel on the Sabbath! That is truly beautiful, but I don't fully understand. Do you mean that only on the Sabbath can we really learn how to relate in love to you or to our neighbors?

Are you saying that on the six days of labor it is impossible to learn how to love with perfect faith?

Thank you Father! That is a precious jewel! Do you have any more like that?

Yes, Father. If I reject your wisdom within your dietary laws, I soon receive your loving discipline of sickness and suffering.

Why, almost none, my Father! Most of them couldn't if they wanted to, for they lived under primitive and difficult circumstances and were forced to eat whatever was available just to keep alive. In fact, many of them seemed to deliberately abuse or neglect their bodies, pouring all their life's energies into their work with a zeal and dedication that is a truly great inspiration to all of us!

I don't know, Father. You're right, it doesn't seem quite right somehow. There were many times when you worked miracles that seemed to be way above and beyond your law, to bring healing and many other kinds of supernatural aid and comfort, but in the end they all died, many of them in sickness, suffering, and utter poverty – even some in failure and disgrace.

What about Jesus' miracles, healings, feeding the five thousand, raising of Lazarus from the dead? Of course Jesus is God, and thus sinless, but it sure seemed like he violated a lot of laws - dietary laws, Sabbath laws... everything!

That is correct. On every other day for six thousand years your commission was to work, and in the environment of work, you cannot fully appreciate one aspect of my love. My love rests upon my completed works, and so has full faith that all shall be accomplished for my beloved as I planned from the beginning.

Correct. But on my Sabbath I teach you how to enter into the rest of my works completed from the foundation of the world. That sets your love for me, as well as your love for your neighbor, upon the solid foundation of faith, so that there need be no anxiousness, human sympathy, or fear for your beloved.

My treasure house is full of jewels! Consider my dietary laws. Do you understand how they are for your own benefit to keep them?

Yes. Consider now the famous missionaries whose biographies you have read. How many of them understood and kept my dietary laws?

Correct. Now, how many of them walked in the fullness of my provision, my protection, or my victory over sin and death? Not one! Have you ever considered why? Did it ever occur to you that perhaps I should have taken better care of my dedicated servants who were so zealous to give themselves to my work? Why do you think I allowed them to continue in sickness, suffering, sin, and death?

You have pinpointed the problem. Here is the solution. I never violate my law. There is nothing above and beyond my law. You can absolutely depend upon it. If I violated my law for even one person for one second, no one could ever quite trust me again. Even the most godly saint on earth who continues to violate my dietary laws will in time get sick and die.

Walk with me, my son. You will learn many higher laws of my spirit realm to lift you up to a triumphant fulfillment of all my laws. The law of sin and death is not violated, but rather fulfilled within him in whom there is no sin!

Thank you, Father, for that last lesson on law. I appreciate now more than ever how precious your law is – far beyond my understanding – and I am deeply grateful to you for it.

Yes, Father! I am eager to hear! Though it seems strange to me to hear you say that you are thankful. You are God, and all I am and have I owe to you, so it is my duty as well as my joy to be thankful to you. But how could you possibly stoop to be thankful to me?

I can understand how that relates to your saints giving thanks to one another, and giving thanks to you, as expressions of our love. And I know that you are love. But somehow I can't put it together to comprehend why you need to give thanks to us.

But it is so difficult for me to receive your gratitude, when I realize that I am nothing but what you have given me! How can you ever be grateful to anyone else? Everything flows from you! It still doesn't make sense!

Arrogant? Haughty? That sounds awful! That's like calling you proud when you reveal the beautiful truth that all the universe must bow before you as the one and only true God!

I am thankful that you are thankful! I placed within you that spirit of thankfulness, to teach you about your expressions of thanksgiving, and how much they mean to me.

You are correct that all thanks returns to me. Yet your question shows that you do not understand what thanksgiving is. If it were merely duty's response for services rendered, then I could not be thankful to you. But it is much more than that! Thanksgiving is love's expression of appreciation for the beloved. It is love's response for every action, attitude, or thought coming from a heart of love. Indeed, thanksgiving is a word picture of love itself, and thus is an expression of my own nature. Love has many ways to express itself, but the easiest way to your beloved's heart is to give thanks. It says, "I see something beautiful and precious in you, and it delights me!"

When you bow in thankful gratitude to me, you see yourself as humbling yourself before me in worship and praise, but others see my own nature within you, for they see you only returning unto me that which flowed from me in the first place. This brings me honor and glory, for it is my own nature of love that your gratitude expresses. Thus others are able to see me in you! Ultimately they too are drawn up into thankfulness and praise.

Have you ever taken a long, arduous hike, and afterwards been thankful to your body for so obediently, willingly, and capably carrying you so far? Then understand that you are my body. I am most grateful for every willing expression of myself, my nature and character, and my thoughts, desires, plans and purposes, through you. You honor me greatly when you willingly express my eternal life form through your physical being. I would appear most arrogant and haughty if I were not grateful!

Yet some do think of me as proud when they hear that, but only because they have not yet seen my thankful love displayed within my precious ones! Thank you for making it clear!

Wow, Father! It is so refreshing talking to you! You make me feel special, precious, like a treasure in your own sight. Imagine, you, the king of all the universe, giving thanks to me! I am humbled and overawed at the greatness of your love.

Yes it does! It makes me realize that you are not expressing thankfulness to my flesh nature or even my soul, for to do so would make me proud. But you are thankful to my spirit, or rather to your spirit within me, for everything good that I am and do comes from you.

Uh... now that I think about it, I must confess that I still am very much confused about that. Romans 8:16 talks about your spirit bearing witness with our spirit that we are your sons, but Ephesians 4:3-4 says that there is only one body and one spirit, and we must be diligent to preserve the unity of the spirit. But I have learned that when one verse of scripture seems to contradict another, there is a hidden truth awaiting those who seek your wisdom! Please, Father, teach me your wisdom about the unity of spirit that you require.

Does that mean that we no longer can use the words "my" or "mine"? Are you saying that everything of me (at least everything good) actually came from you and returns to you, so I can't even say "my body" or "my spirit"?

Thank you, Father of All! Now I understand what you meant in Sabbath Rest II, when you said that all of satan's works are lies built upon a foundation of lies. You, and you alone, are truth and reality – all and in all! I praise you!

[Laughing with glee] Stop, my son, and listen to what you have just said! You are humbled, when I make you feel like a special treasure?! Does that give you a clue that my thankfulness to you is different from worldly expressions of human-centered thankfulness?

Yes! The thanksgiving, like everything that is good, both comes from me and returns to me. But now you have touched on the heart of this lesson. Stop and think about it. Whose spirit am I really being thankful to, yours, or mine? [Smiling] Or are you confused between them?

Yes, my beloved son. First review the lessons on Adam, oneness, and spirit, soul, & body. Now, be aware that very few have understood Ephesians 4 before. Most readers believe in two bodies (the first and the second Adam), and two eternal spirits (mine and that of the evil one). Even Paul did not fully comprehend what he wrote when I inspired him to say, "One lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all." and "... until we all attain to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the son of God, to a mature man..." Most Bible scholars recognize his bold statement as prophetic, but assume that "all" applies only to the saints. Thus they give satan the victory over the majority of humanity, and consider me "lucky" to reach a few. But in reality, my use of the word "all" is indeed all-inclusive, for from my perspective in eternity the self-nature and all that it has begotten has been defeated, destroyed, and totally annihilated, and only that which I have fathered remains.

Not at all. All that I have given you is yours, and remains yours for all time. But once you understand the unity of the spirit, you realize that all I have fathered is also still mine, even though I have given it to you, for we are one. You are like a finger which claims ownership of its fingernail, while I chuckle in paternal glee, as head over both the finger and the nail. Your body is but a small part of my body, your spirit a small part of mine. We are one!

Yes, my Father? I'm sorry, I thought this lesson was finished.

[Pause...] Yes Lord, I believe that, and I think I understand. I just said, you are the eternal Father of All. You alone are truth and reality. You are all and in all, just as the Scripture says. How can you make it any more clear?

You can't mean that everything that exists is you?! That sounds like pantheism!

I understand, Father, that each of us members of your physical body may be no more than a hair under your armpit, and that no honor is due us, but all fear, glory, and honor is due to you. But what about the rocks, the bugs, and the dust? Are they also part of you?

I see! I see! So all these things you created are fulfilling their intended function by your word. Though they have no life of their own, they are an extension of you, like tools in your hands, bringing you glory.

Wait, my son. Hear me carefully now!

This lesson is just begun. You are a newborn who has just opened his eyes to a new world. Meditate on this: I Am God; I Am one; **I Am**.

All things are created in me. All things have their existence in me. All things are sustained by the word of my power. All wisdom and knowledge is but getting to know me and my ways. All virtue is but an expression of my nature and character. All wickedness is but the shadow behind my back, giving the contrast to my nature and character. All things of me are returning unto me, and all things not of me are the lie, to be used by me for my purposes during the ages of sin, but having no existence at all from my perspective in eternity. I am perfect and complete, needing nothing. Hear me again: I Am one; I Am. There is none else.

Pantheism is a tragic perversion of a very real truth. Pantheists would have you worship and fear the bugs, the rocks, the dust. That is as stupid as a person worshipping the hair under his armpits. Yet in truth, the hair under your armpits has a proper place and function, a form of "honor" if you will. Just so you also have your proper place and function within my body, which you fulfill with honor to my glory, taking no glory or worship for yourself.

Things are just things, my son. I enjoy them, I use them, but I do not love them. Yet in a very real sense they are also an extension of myself. They are like the tools in the hands of the master craftsman. Just tools, replaceable if they break, certainly not worthy of love and devotion, yet watch how they come alive in the hands of the master! The simplest knife or chisel is a joy to watch as it moves under the guidance and power of the master craftsman.

Exactly! In that sense they exist ("have life," if you will) within me, with every molecule and particle perfectly orchestrated by my word. Many have laughed at the thought, but at my word the stones do indeed sing out my praise!

But Father, why are you telling me all this? I don't understand the significance of it all.

[Pause...] I can't, Father! That is beyond my comprehension.

Stop! I can't take any more! You are perfect, but we fall so far short of your glory! The world is so full of perversion and darkness! How can I pull it all together into oneness with you?! When I think like that the burden of the universe seems to fall upon me!

But Father, I don't suffer anymore, because you are my healer! I don't stumble in darkness anymore because you are my light!

Yes, Father. I do will to do your will. If you can use me in your ministry of reconciliation, I humbly offer myself to your service.

You cannot understand while you are thinking in terms of me and you, separate from the rest of creation. Now, change your perspective. Think in terms of just me, over and in and through all of creation. I, *only* I, Am!

I know. Here, take mine. Identify with me. Identify with my creation. You are one speck in a vast and awesome universe, one carefully formed letter in a thirty volume encyclopedia, one molecule in a complex body, one...

No, my son! Upon me! I am the head! But you are beginning to get the picture. You call me perfect and so I am. But don't forget, I am one! I can only be perfect when all in me are also perfect. So from your time-based perspective I am not yet perfect, because my physical body is not yet perfect, and we are one. When you suffer, so do I. When you stumble in darkness, I also fall, weeping in deepest agony.

*I am one.* You, in me, are one. When the least significant particle of my creation is still in darkness, then all of my creation is still in darkness. All creation is in travail, my son. Each particle must be reconciled to the whole. Do you really think that you could be saved complete, whole, perfect, while one particle of my creation lies suffering under the bondage of the lie? Think of your body; if your finger were caught in a trap, would you walk away from it, rejoicing? No! If any member is in a trap, the whole body is trapped until that member is set free. Do you wish to be raised in perfection to inherit the kingdom I prepared from the beginning of time? Then lift up your brother and believe for him. Take faith for each particle of my creation. Reject the lie; believe for the curse to be broken; prophesy; minister; reconcile my creation back unto me by my righteousness. This is what I am doing through whosoever will, until all are delivered from darkness into my light.

[Laughing] Oh my son, now you are overly humbled by all I've taught, but you'll recover. *If* I can use you, indeed! **I Am** using you!

Father, I recently received a request to spend time in intense intercession with fasting for our nation. What do you think of that?

Do you mean that if I just agreed with their request on the basis that it sounds like a good idea, I might end up working against you?

Yes, Father, I understand and submit to you in that. I know that too often in the past I did spend time and effort praying and fasting for things that turned out to be against your will. How thankful I was later when I saw your sovereign will triumph over our prayers, and realized what a mess we would have made if you had just submitted to us!

Father, are you talking about “prayer,” or “intercession”? From your lessons on it, I know that prayer is constant communion with you in the spirit, dwelling in your presence, becoming like you in nature and character, learning your wisdom and confirming your will, and letting your spirit say and do your will through me in your time and way. But I thought that intercession was only standing in the gap for those who are weak, so the evil one won't be able to destroy them.

Yes, Father. From your lesson on health, you have led me to abstain from many foods that are not fit for the kingdom, and to eat only good wholesome foods to purify my body and mind as your temple, your dwelling place.

The whole purpose of the fast has changed! Before, I fasted by denying myself, to weaken the flesh so the spirit had a chance to become effective. But now, since I reckon the flesh nature totally dead anyway, strengthening my physical body doesn't weaken my spirit! So I fast by treating myself to only the very best foods that you have created for me, which strengthens my whole body, soul, and spirit.

I am glad, my son, that you first come to me. It is easy to make an emotional response to the many “good” things that people ask you to do. That is not the right response, and in many cases it leads to active opposition to my will.

Correct. You could spend a lot of time and wear your body down with fasting and prayer against the very things I sent to be a blessing, or for other things that would bring a curse.

I will teach you of prayer and fasting in my kingdom. The religious world has conditioned you to think of fasting as weakening the body to get power in the spirit, and of intercession as trying to twist my arm to do some “good” they want, or to change my mind about some “evil” judgment I had planned to send – it is all based on fruit from the tree of knowledge.

Intercession is prayer. Prayer is a big word. As you learn about fasting and intercession you are learning about prayer. Some think that prayer and fasting are not really needed in the kingdom. Nothing is farther from the truth! The kingdom functions continually by prayer and fasting, and intercession is a way of life for my mature sons. Let's start with fasting. You have been fasting for several years now, and are getting better at it all the time. Are you aware of the fast that I have led you in?

And the result is that your fasting has become a joyful thing, a blessing and strengthening in body, mind, soul, and spirit. I enjoy eating through you as well as praying through you, resulting in the glory and power of my nature shining through you. This is the kingdom fast, when I am king over your appetite.

Yes, and you have no idea how much I enjoy eating through you as I fill your entire being with the exuberance and vitality of my life form. This is the power and effectiveness of true prayer and intercession, for it is my life, the life of the ages, in and through you. Now do you understand why there can be no power or effectiveness in prayer without fasting?



I think so. Fasting is a deliberate yielding of myself to your lordship, in recognition of the need for your Holy Spirit power and authority in order to accomplish anything good. To be effective in intercession, my fasting actively demonstrates your absolute lordship over my whole being, so that the earthly principalities and powers recognize you in me.

It almost sounds like I am fasting in the spirit as well as in the physical!

Thank you, Father! I appreciate your loving care in strengthening every aspect of my whole being, so that I may be of use to you in your kingdom. I sense that in this I am being prepared for some true kingdom intercession?

That sounds like a big job ahead of us!

Father, I don't know how to respond. I know the scripture says that all your works were complete from the 7th day of creation, but...

Thank you, Father. But, how do I use your eyes? I don't have the infinite capacity to see at all places and all times like...

And that purpose is...?

Hallelujah my Father! I eagerly enter into your perfect fast and true intercession, that your word of reconciliation may come boldly and clearly through me. All praise and glory be unto you alone for your wonderful Plan of the Ages: manifesting your completed works in the physical realm through your sons.

Very good. Physical food gives physical life; spirit food gives spirit life. In the past, the flesh was at war with the spirit, so to make the spirit strong, you had to make the flesh weak. But in the kingdom, your whole being dwells in my peace, so I can feed you good physical and spiritual food at the same time. Thus my life flowing through you is unhindered by any weaknesses of body, soul, or spirit.

You are! You eat only and all that I provide by my Holy Spirit, and you carefully discern and reject all wrong spirits, refusing to allow them access to become part of you. To me, that is no different from the physical fast I give you.

Yes indeed, but it is not the pleading, arguing, shouting, arm-wrestling, faithless intercession of the past. Now you are prepared to intercede in faith, in perfect assurance that through you I accomplish my perfect will, covering my sheep, bringing forth maturity in my saints, and restoring all that was hurt by the curse.

No, it is finished.

But you see so much that must yet be done, I know. Your eyes are faulty, since they are conditioned by the age of sin. Here, use mine.

By faith, my son, all by faith! I say it is done; you believe it. And if your physical eyes see something that disagrees with my word, trust that I have allowed you to see it for a purpose.

Why do you think I committed unto you the word of reconciliation? My word is truth; anything that seems to be in conflict with it is a lie. Intercession continues to stand firm in faith between the truth of my word and the lie of my creation bound in sin, until the lie is exposed and the truth becomes manifest in the flesh for every eye to see. Review the lessons on futility and Sabbath Rest. Now it is time for true intercession with my perfect fast to be joined to my word of reconciliation through my sons. There and there alone is my power and authority to set all of my creation free!

Thank you, my Father, for your patience and willingness to allow me to ask you so many questions. Your answers have blessed me and given me much food for thought. I feel full, like I have had a big feast of wisdom and truth! Right now I have no more questions. I just want to stay in your presence loving you and appreciating your goodness and glory.

Oh, thank you, Father! Will it be long and complete, covering all the details that we need to know about the fullness of your kingdom on earth? That will be incredible! I imagine it will take another volume all by itself...

Yes, Father, I hear you. I humble myself before you with a thankful heart that you stoop down to give me a glimpse of the fantastic beauty, depth, and harmony of your many-splendored kingdom. It seems like you have given me so much already that I am full to the bursting, and it doesn't seem possible that I could still be just a beginner, a baby, in your kingdom. But I humbly confess that is what I am. I do now acknowledge your surpassing greatness, glory, power, wisdom, and beauty, all infinite far beyond my comprehension or imagining.

Yes, Father. I learned the good news that your kingdom is come and your will is done right now in the hearts and lives of your sons. Your lordship is total. Your sovereign authority rules over everyone and everything in all your creation. Your Plan of the Ages cannot fail in even the slightest detail. You have set your sons free from sin (and its deception, guilt, and bondage) into the glorious freedom of the righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ. You have brought us into oneness and fellowship with you and each member of your body. And you have revealed in us a little of your nature and character (especially your awesome love and grace for all you have fathered!) that we may become like you and reveal you to others.

And you are welcome to do so. I have good news for you, my son. Volume 4 is nearly finished. You have no more questions because you have already asked all that I intended for *The Gospel of the Kingdom*. In this last lesson we shall summarize the whole book, and then I have a surprise for you: a fifth volume which we shall simply call "The kingdom."

[Laughing] No, no! It will be brief and basic, covering just the simplest concepts that my child needs to gain a vision for my kingdom. From your perspective, the lessons I've given you so far have been deep and challenging to your mind and spirit. You consider this book far-reaching and theologically earth-shaking. But from my perspective, this whole book is just a brief basic primer for my new baby son.

Good. That is the right attitude to learn of me. You do indeed have much more to learn than you can comprehend now. Years from now you will be matured to the point of having a basic understanding of how my kingdom works and how much you have yet to learn. But do not be anxious! My Plan of the Ages includes thousands of years of growing up in all aspects of wisdom and knowledge into my own nature and character. For now, we'll keep it simple. Summarize for me in one paragraph what you have learned so far.

Good! And thank you. You have caught the essence of the good news. You have entered wholeheartedly into my kingdom. Now it is time for me to pull up those last roots from the age of sin, the very roots of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, the last remaining shreds of self-motivation and unbelief, and cast them forever into the pit from whence they came. You are now of me, through and through; my life is yours and your life is mine. Though still a baby, I now have in you a clear vessel to do, say, and write all that I give you, from my perspective of perfect righteousness. I give you the kingdom! Walk in it by faith, for I shall bring it from the realms of faith into the realm of sight within you my beloved son.

But Father, surely we can't be done with this lesson so soon! I mean, was my little summary really okay? I left out so many things!

Well, my answer is pretty basic and simple, but it does come from my heart. Now that I stop to think about it, however, I see that it is actually pretty profound; each of those simple statements hides a deep wealth of wisdom that you have revealed to me. I guess anyone who is inspired by you could preach a lengthy sermon from each statement in my answer.

And like a treasure mine, the deeper we are willing to dig, the more treasure we find. As in your lessons on truth and scripture, even the simplest, most basic word from you is actually an infinite, many-layered revelation of yourself in all your glory!

I guess it all depends on what one is looking for, doesn't it. Those who actually love the world in their hearts will always find things to criticize or condemn in those whose hearts are full of love for only you.

And you are so wonderful, and so full of all things that are satisfying and delightful, that I just can't understand why anyone would choose the pleasures of this world instead of you!

Yes, Lord. But my limited perspective has been illumined by your truth, while their limited perspective is still darkened by satan's lie! Besides, it seems to me that you came down on sinners pretty hard in some of your earlier lessons, such as shepherd and fear.

That is good news, Father! I do believe you, and I receive your kingdom even though I don't fully understand it. Take me, Father, and deal with me as a son in your kingdom!

Your summary was just fine, my son. This was not a test. I did not ask you to repeat all the details. Relax, and look at your answer.

Exactly. That is the good news, my son. My living word is simple and basic enough for a child to delight in and learn from, yet still profound enough for even the most mature of my sons to return to again and again. Every word of truth from my spirit is like that, my son. Everyone who comes with an open heart to feed upon my living word, finds a satisfying feast, no matter what his age or maturity.

Yes, but only for those with the eyes to see. A treasure for one is garbage for another. There are those who dig into my holy scripture only to discover confusing contradictions or find justifications for their wicked deeds. But by eyes illumined by my spirit the contradictions become revelations of deeper wisdom, and the justification for wickedness becomes freedom to walk in the beauty of my righteousness.

And their very condemnation of my sons is their own judgment, for it shows what fills their hearts. But as your heart is filled with my perfect love, all else is left behind, for my love is a two-way bridge into all that I am.

Ah, but let there be no condemnation in your heart, my son. They are deceived; they know not what they do. Love them, and trust me for them. They, like you, only want whatever seems best from their limited perspective.

I never condemn the sinner, my son. His own sin condemns him without a word from me. But I do expose the religious hypocrites who refuse to enter the kingdom and work to keep others out also. That is not to condemn them; it is to open their eyes to the bitter fruit of fear and bondage resulting from their deeds, as well as to keep you, my son, from eating their poisonous fruit. The sweet and precious fruit of my kingdom is freely available to any who put aside intellectual pride, anxiousness and fear, and just believe and receive as a child.

Uh, Father? Aren't we done with this lesson? I'm ready for your "surprise," your new chapter on the kingdom.

Well, it's got to be your love, for you are love. Your love is so deep, so high, so vast and widespread, so central to your nature and character, so unfailing and perfect, that it even reaches out to your enemies – even reaches down to hell itself and those who hate you. Your love never gives up on them, and when your justice is satisfied, your love wins the victory in them, too. Thus at the age of the ages everyone and everything is reconciled back to you and you become all and in all.

Yes Lord. I remember. It is your wrath against sin and against that terrible sin nature which holds your precious ones captive. In your lessons on unity and lake of fire you said the sin nature would finally be annihilated so your precious ones can be set free.

Ah yes, Lord. Luke 14:26 and Matthew 10:37. In comparison with my love for you, I must hate my own parents, wife, children, even my own life, or I cannot be your disciple.

Right. That's what it means to deny myself, take up my cross daily, and follow you, from Luke 9:23.

Wow. You're right Lord. I should be more careful with my words. It's not about hating my parents, my family, or myself, it's about loving you more than I love them. Otherwise it turns your holy word into a mishmash of contradictions. I know you command me to love my neighbor as myself, love my wife, honor my parents, and care for my family. Much of the New Testament is about loving one another. That's how the world knows we are your disciples, by our love. [Jn 13:35]

One last thing. Your summary was good, but now condense it. What is the heart, the one most important thing, of all I've taught you?

That is good, my son. You've learned your lessons well. That is indeed the good news, the Gospel of the Kingdom. Now I would teach you how it works. You've caught the bright side; turn back now to look at the dark side of my love. Recall your earlier lessons on love and sword, in which I taught you that love hates all that is harming the beloved. You still have much to learn about my hate. True love, whether mine or yours, must also be filled with hate, wrath, and indignation.

Annihilated, yes. All of satan's works shall be destroyed. That is what the lake of fire is for. From my perspective in eternity it is done. But from your time perspective it is a long process. You don't yet know how to hate. I taught you to know my perfect love, now I teach you to know my perfect hatred. They go together.

True, but remember my double-edged sword. Everyone has a sin nature inherited from the first Adam, even you. That, you must hate. Reckon it crucified daily, dead and buried.

Yes, but stop and think about it. What do I mean, here? Misunderstanding this has led to horrible perversions such as asceticism, self-flagellation, divorce, or refusing to care for one's own family – I hate that too! Some even go so far as to refuse to care for their elderly parents, claiming that I said to hate them!

Here is the key, my son. There is no neutral independent self. That is a lie from satan in the Garden of Eden, when he said, "You shall be as gods, knowing good and evil." The soul without my Spirit is dead, but not empty – it is filled with satan and motivated by his evil nature. That and only that is what you must hate, whether in yourself or in anyone else. When you hate the lie, then you are free to truly love all that is of me in each person, for I made each of you in my own image.

Oh yes, I remember your talking about the lie of the independent self in your lessons on spiritual warfare and heaven and hell. Would you please elaborate on just what is the lie?

In your lesson on spiritual warfare you said that the sinner's soul is filled with the spirit of antichrist, that all his deeds are inspired by his father the devil, and that he is dead in sin until your Holy Spirit quickens him, while everything the saint does is led by your Spirit. In your lesson on free will, you said that everyone has perfect freedom, but only to operate according to his nature. Those with a sinful nature cannot be led by your Spirit, so...

Ahh, I see. So I can hate the nature of satan and all that satan is doing in a person, yet still look to find your own nature that is being smothered underneath, and pour out your love for him no matter how evil he may be.

And when someone does me wrong, rather than get angry at him or hate him, I can hate the evil nature in him that inspired him to do wrong while still seeing him as someone created in your image, infinitely precious, whom Jesus died to save.

And that nature of satan will ultimately be totally destroyed in the lake of fire, so that even Lucifer himself will be set free to become that for which you created him.

Well, yes. But if I focus only on that, why do I even need to learn how to hate...

And that is the Good News, the Gospel of the Kingdom, that we are not our own. We are your children, created by you, redeemed by your love in Christ, and ultimately returning to you, one way or another, though some may have to go through hell and back to get there.

The lie of the independent self is that you can be as gods, knowing good and evil, and that you can make your own choice, based on your own knowledge of good and evil, and your choice is neutral, neither godly nor demonic.

Careful! You're falling back into satan's trap. I won't let you go there anymore. The sinner has two natures at war within. My nature may lie dormant under the nature of the evil one, but it's still there. Satan wants you to believe that someone is independently good or evil, but it's a lie. If you believe he is evil, you are justified in hating him. If you believe he is good, you are justified in idolizing him. You must look deeper to rightly discern the body.

Now you've got it. That's why I said that hate and love go so close together. It requires very careful discernment – the sword of the Spirit operating like a scalpel – to separate between the thoughts and intentions of the heart.

Even more than that, you can respond to the evil done you with kindness and love, for you know it is not him but the nature of satan operating within him that hurt you. Now you are no longer a baby, with self as the center of your universe. Now you see the universe from my eyes! You understand how true love and true hate win the victory not just in the future, but now, in you, in all you do each day.

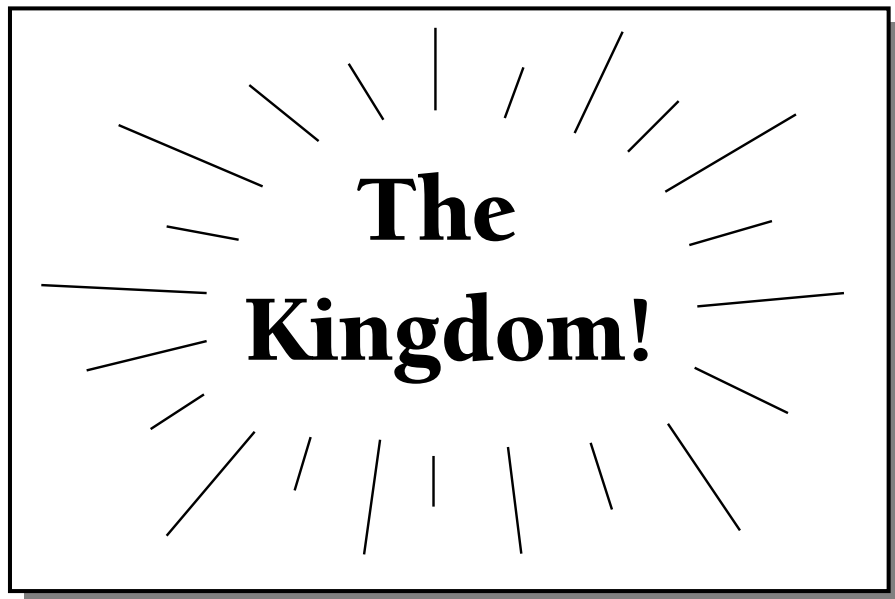
[Laughing] Yes, but why focus on satan? Just accept by faith that from my eternal perspective, it is done. That evil nature is destroyed and all creation is set free into the glory of the many-membered Adam, the sons of God.

Your wife! Your children and extended family! Friends! Neighbors! They may not know me yet! The truth is not yet manifest. Many still believe the lie and those who know the truth may still be conditioned by the lie. Now you know you are, my son, but I have many more. I will not fail to lead every last one into willing submission to me, that I may restore my image in them, too, That is my Plan of the Ages.



# *The Gospel of the Kingdom*

*Volume 5*







Good morning, my son! Are you ready to receive the little surprise I promised?

Yes, my Father! Ready, eager, and joyfully waiting for whatever you wish to give me.

Here now, take my hand, and step with me into the fullness of my kingdom!

Yes, my Lord and my God! But you know this is beyond my own capacity...

There are no "Yes, but's" in my kingdom, my son. Leave behind your old doubts and fears! They belong to an age of sin now past. Trust and receive the full promise!

YES, FATHER! I do trust and obey you now with all my heart, soul, and mind.

I receive your words, spoken by faith. I now operate on your heart, still conditioned by the past age of sin. My son, my son! Prepare yourself, for this will hurt us both.

Yes, Father... What are you doing?

Your sin is forgiven, cleansed, and blotted out for all eternity. Now I am removing the root, as I said I would do in the lesson, "Good News." It hurts because this is the dark river of death: death to self and all its related forms of unbelief and idolatry, death to human wisdom and desire, death to the bondage of all the time and resource limitations of the physical realm.

Oh, my God! What is happening to me? It's like fire! Am I burning up?

Yes.

It hurts! It is more that I can bear! Yet, there is a joy and purpose in the pain... I fear to let it continue. Yet if I resist it will stop, and then I will fail to receive the promise. And oh my Lord and my God, you know I want your promise more than life itself! Yes, Lord God. Take my life. Slay me however you will. I do trust in your resurrection power to fulfill your word. Somehow, even though I be dead... yet shall I live and declare the mighty works of my God.

[Weeping] My son, my beloved son! I share your pain in ways you cannot comprehend now, but shall hereafter... It is finished! The lie that was your independent-self has been destroyed. You are now and forever part of me.

Where am I? Who am I? This isn't me! What has happened to me?

Awaken, my beloved! Arise and shine with the light that was mine from all eternity!

My eyes... How can they bear this unbearable light? It blinds me, yet... I see! I see!

Arise! Come away with me, my beloved! How I have eagerly waited yes longed for this day! With joy unspeakable I cradle you in my arms of love and draw you into my life of the ages!

Yes, my master, my sovereign Lord, I am yours. I will come with you wherever you go.

Stand here beside me, my beloved, and look all around. Tell me all that you see, everywhere.

Jesus! All I can see is you! You are so intensely bright, yet you must have strengthened my eyes, for I can see you clearly as never before. I see your infinite, self-sacrificing love, sparkling as a billion diamonds of mercy, compassion, gentleness, kindness, and patience toward all that you have created. I see your holy, holy, holy righteousness shining as a covering of justice and right judgment over everything in the universe. I see your intense goodness, your awesome wisdom, your glorious beauty... I can't take my eyes off of you!

I too, my beloved, with greatest and purest delight, see only you. And I treasure this view, for as a father sees the world afresh through the eyes of his enthusiastically curious son, so I see my creation in a new and delightful way through your wide and wondering eyes. My perspective of the infinite wisdom and knowledge of eternity leaves little place for the awe and wonder, the surprised delight, the excited exploration, the joyful discoveries. I want to experience all that through you, my love. Please look deeper and higher into me, and describe to me all you see.

Yes, Jesus. I see your infinite power and authority, standing steadfast like a massive foundation stone upon which everything else in all the universe rests – your creative, sustaining power by which all things came into being and through which all things hang together. Why, it is the rock of truth, upon which all facts are based! Oh Jesus, I see! You *are* the truth! Not only did you create all the facts in this universe as limited expressions of your truth, but without your constant flow of life to them they would all collapse into nothingness. Even mundane things like mathematical or scientific facts find their definition, their truth, their purpose, only in you as they reveal a bit more of your faithful nature and character!

Yes, my love! Your descriptions are music to my ears and worship to my heart.

Oh, Jesus, I hear music too! But I hear it from *all* your creation, as every atom vibrates to the tune of your creative and sustaining word. Like a mighty orchestra, all creation fills the universe with songs of praise and worship unto you, singing triumphantly of your awesome power and glory to all who have the ears to hear. Truly, your kingdom is come for all who have the eyes to see and the ears to hear. Has it always been this way, my Lord and king?

Always, my beloved, ever since I first poured forth my spirit of wisdom at the dawn of time. And in every age I have always had at least one who did have eyes to see and ears to hear, and who walked with me in the fullness of all that I prepared for you.

Who were they? Where are they now? May I meet with any of them?

[Laughing] Yes, yes! You will meet them all, each in his proper time. They are all here with me, in me. Look deeper into me, what do you see?

Now I see you more clearly as my eyes grow accustomed to the intense light. I see a plain looking man, smiling at me. You look quite humble and friendly. I have trouble distinguishing your features – you could be anybody I've known. You are dressed in the purest white; it doesn't seem to be cloth. Oh! It's light! What a beautiful and modest covering, and it never needs washing or changing!

Yes, my love. You too are clothed the same, though you cannot see it yet.

Oh my Lord and master, how could I turn away from you to look at myself?

I won't ever ask you to turn away. But in time you will see yourself in me.

Thank you for that promise, Lord, I do trust that I also am there in your heart. The deeper I look, the bigger I find your heart to be! How can such a big heart fit into one humble man as I see before me? It seems that all creation rests there, continually caressed by your great love and nurtured by your infinite grace!

Your perception is correct; from my perspective in eternity it is indeed all at rest within my heart. Yet you are still within time. What do you see from within time?

It seems... I'm just a baby, fresh from the womb, opening newly awakened eyes to marvel at things far beyond my understanding. Thank you for bring me to birth in your kingdom.

You are welcome, my love. Your joy is my delight. Come up with me higher, look deeper, wider. Your vision is still fixed just in front of you, and I want you to see me as I am, to the uttermost.

Oh my Lord and my God! I am breathless! We are up so high! But where are you now?

Right here, underneath, above, all around you. Gaze at me, and tell me what you see!

I see the whole universe within your heart! It's like there is a vast countryside, stretching out in all directions to a horizon hundreds of miles away. No, it's more than that: I see two completely different universes side by side. The land is divided into two levels by a high cliff below me. The higher level, to my right, is the most beautiful countryside I have ever seen. When I turn to my left and look down over the cliff, the entire land is covered with brownish-gray haze, giving me the impression of terrible corruption and stagnation. It looks like billions of people down there, all struggling aimlessly under partial blindness. They seem to all be looking down, seeking their own selfish pleasures, and never looking up to you. How can that be? Am I not seeing correctly? Is this not within your heart?

You see correctly. I carry them all within my heart. Why do you think I suffer so?

I do not carry their evil, that is now Satan's task. But their suffering and pain, misery and despair, heartache, longing, struggle in hope against hope – I carry all of that to the very last teardrop. Satan laughs now, but he too will soon understand suffering.

I'm sorry, my Lord. Wait! Now I do see some souls anxiously looking up. They don't seem to like what they see, though, for most of them look right back down. Many of them seem to be heading this way, glancing up occasionally. They can't see you; what do they see?

They see my law, shining brightly before them whenever they look up. It is the only solid, stable, sure thing in that shadowy existence of theirs. Look right below you.

Yes, it looks like a huge sunlit cliff, incredibly high, steep, and rugged, stretched from one horizon to the other, separating the two universes like an unclimbable barrier. Yet as I look closely, I see many people trying to climb it! Surely they can see it is impossible! None are more than a tenth of the way up, and it gets steeper above them! And look at the top; you have a high fence topped with barbed wire the whole length of the cliff; even if they got to the top they couldn't get past that. Why do you make it so tough on them, Lord?

My law was never intended to provide a way to reach my kingdom; and the high fence is not to keep them out, but to keep you from falling over the cliff, my beloved. Remember now how you came to me. Was it through your keeping of my law?

Oh, no, Lord. But it seems that for many years you let me also struggle to climb that cliff. Now that I have finally given up and submitted to your mercy and grace, is my struggle over? Will you set me down safely behind the fence to live forever in your kingdom?

You are safely in my kingdom right now. I have only brought your spirit up here for your learning, that you may better appreciate my wisdom and grace. Do you see why?

Yes, Lord. Now that I have seen how your law protects me from falling over the cliff into that sinful world below, I am more thankful for it than ever. Your law delivers me from anxiousness, so that I can explore your kingdom with only the purest delight and freedom.

Not quite, my love. The cliff is the law, not the fence. The fence and its barbed wire are merely my gentle reminder of loving discipline if you get too close to the edge. But now look closely at the cliff. Notice that it is an exposure of the bedrock for the entire plateau. My entire kingdom is founded on the bedrock of my law. Anywhere in my kingdom you are safe because you stand on solid rock.

Now, my love, look deeper yet into the suffering side of my heart, and learn wisdom there.

Yes, Lord. I see so many people doing so many things, but nothing lasts. It is all vanity and futility, like they are building on mud or shifting sand. What some are building, others are tearing down. Many of them are building right next to the cliff, pointing at it with great vigor and preaching to others to climb it or even work together to build towers to the top.

Deeper yet, my son. Can you not see their pain, their anguish of soul, their hopeless despair?

No, Lord. It is so bright here next to your heart – so warm and welcoming – so friendly and – Oh my God! What is going on? You invited me – you brought me into the fullness of your kingdom, and I know that there is no pain, no tears, no sorrow in your kingdom. Yet suddenly I feel their pain – pain like I've never felt before – pain worse than when you removed the root of my self-nature. Incredible pain like... Oh. Now I understand.

Yes. Now you understand. Now you know what I carry in my heart for my precious ones.

This pain is in your heart? It has been there since the first sin? How ever can you bear it? And how can it continue to exist in the kingdom where you are absolute sovereign lord?

My love bears it, my son. My love for each of my precious ones, even those down there. Every sin rests upon me. Every sinner continues to exist only because I do bear it. I shall endure their pain until every sinner, from all the ages, has been redeemed.

But my Lord! This is the fullness of your kingdom! No sin can exist here in you!

You have reached the fullness of my kingdom, my son. They have not.

Oh... [Long pause] I see. Yes Lord. I am willing. Love them also through me.

[Laughing] You have touched my deepest heart! I now give you strength to bear it. Now you take upon yourself my one burden, my burden of love for my precious ones. Now you intercede with me for them. Now with me you bear their awful pain. Now you discover the joy of my burden! Though all-consuming, it is easy and light. For in fact the victory is already won, by the Lamb slain from the dawn of time. Their sin and all its suffering and death is already taken from them to my cross.

And you have shown me all this, and given me strength to bear it, because...

Yes, my son! With great joy I grant that you now participate in my victory! I conquered death that you might live. And now I brought you into my kingdom that I might live through you and spread through you the good news of my victory to all creation – indeed that I might use you to apply my victory to all you see below.

Yes, my Father. Now I understand. [Turning to stand beside Jesus, I put my left left arm around Him, and with my right arm I reach down to the multitude in their agony below us.] Be reconciled! [I prophesy] You have all lived in darkness and bondage for far too long! Now let there be light! Let the light of the good news of the kingdom shine forth upon you. Let the blind eyes be opened. Let the deaf ears be unstopped. Let the lame leap for joy. Let the minds clouded by the enemy's lies be washed clean by the cleansing word of God. I have come to set the captives free! Look at me! All of you! I was once just like you! Now behold the glory, the joy, the freedom of the son of God manifest in flesh before you! Come to me! Follow me as I follow the Savior. Be one with me as I am one with him. Satan's lies are all exposed and he has lost. The Lord Jesus Christ has won the victory!

[Whispering] Yes, yes my son. Satan is now crushed under your feet, and all creation is set free.





Topic	Primary Pages	Mentioned on Page... (f = "and following")			
Abraham		79, 112	Body, Many-membered	17-18, 54-55,	14, 15f, 27, 29, 31f, 34, 37, 40, 45, 46, 48, 51, 56, 58,
Accident		31, 40, 48, 56, 68	Body of Christ (The True Church)	105-108	59f, 66, 68, 76, 79, 81-85, 87, 93, 96, 100f, 113, 115, 125, and on.
Action	119-120	3, 7, 13, 25, 32, 38, 44, 52, 67, 88, 94, 99, 120, 124, 127, 144	Boldness		5-7, 22, 99, 116, 145, 149
Adam	83-84	12, 13, 27, 57, 58, 64, 71, 101-103, 106, 145, 152	Bondage	62	14, 21, 27, 28, 32, 43, 47, 48, 49, 56, 60, 68, 76, 86, 95, 97, 102, 103f, 105, 127, 135f, 137f, 141, 147, 150f, 157, 160
Age of Grace		9, 10	Book of Life	123-125	72, 126, 127, 130
Age of Sin		15, 40, 57, 68, 125, 130, 146, 149, 150, 157	Bride of Christ	125	9, 17, 46, 49, 73, 78, 79, 82, 83f, 101, 124f, 126, 134, 142
Ages to Come, Age of the Ages	8-10	17f, 27, 28, 41, 42, 45-49, 64, 73-76, 80, 84, 85, 89, 92, 104-107, 123, 126-130, 134, 138, 152, 157	Brother, Sister	23, 125	20, 23, 34, 58, 82, 93, 101, 125, 126, 127, 132, 142, 147
Ambition		4, 34, 62, 97, 100	Building Kingdom	76-77	94, 131, 136, 142
Angels	50-51	45, 57, 96, 117, 121	Burden		4, 17, 28, 31, 33f, 52, 66, 76, 122, 138, 147, 160
Anger		39, 51, 81, 90, 92, 97, 98, 132,	Cancer		107
Animals	130	15f, 21, 31, 56, 58, 92, 117, 126, 134, 137	Capstone		76, 142
Antichrist		52, 59, 153	Change, Unchanging		9-11, 17, 27, 30, 32, 46, 56, 61, 76, 84, 94, 111f, 116, 119, 134, 148
Anxiousness		5, 19, 24f, 29, 38, 56, 63, 76f, 81, 88, 90, 94f, 97, 99, 101, 108, 119, 126, 130, 140, 143, 150f, 159	Chaos		45, 141
Apostle		29, 118, 136, 137	Character of God	121	3, 7, 11, 13f, 18, 19f, 23, 39, 42, 46, 47, 51, 59, 64, 65, 67f, 71, 77, 81 and on
Armor (Spiritual)		50-53	Christ, Messiah	23	6, 23, 38, 46, 52, 56, 61, 63f, 66, 71, 73, 82, 96, 101f, 105, 108, 111, 118, 120, 121, 123f, 129, 135f, 150, 153, 160
Arrogant, Haughty		13, 25, 112, 144,	Christian	73	29, 37f, 41, 44, 48, 77, 85, 91
Atom		82,120, 158	Church Institutions		66, 102, 136
Atone, Atonement		14, 124f, 129, 130	Church, True		(see Body of Christ)
Attitude		7, 30, 85, 100f, 106, 119f, 144, 150	Circumstances	5	4, 15, 31, 49, 72, 86, 87, 120, 137, 143
Authority	87-88	15, 20f, 26, 32f, 53, 54, 56, 65, 67f, 71, 74, 82, 96f, 99, 111, 120, 129, 135f, 149, 150, 158	Cities		100f
Baptism of Fire	30	4, 103	Commerce		66, 67f, 100
Beautiful, Attractive		43, 57, 77, 89, 104, 111, 130, 143, 144, 158f	Community	100-102	106
Bitter, Bitterness		39, 43f, 51, 95, 132, 151	Compassion		9, 33, 48, 68, 129, 157
Blessings	9-10	20f, 32, 53, 58f, 62, 68, 74, 83, 93, 97. 118, 129, 130, 133, 141, 148	Condemn, Condemnation	97-98, 151	32, 55, 85f, 95, 102, 132, 134, 137
Blood		4, 14, 15, 37, 39, 51, 54, 112, 115, 129, 132, 138			

Note: some topics (like "body of Christ" and "righteousness") are used so commonly that only the earlier or more important pages are listed in this index.

Conditioning	94-95	4, 13, 33, 50, 54, 67, 82, 122, 129, 153	Doubt, Unbelief	25-26	30, 51, 72, 80, 84, 94f, 138f, 140, 157
Confirmation		38, 138	Eden, Garden of		105, 130, 152
Counselor		137f	Education		66, 67f
Craftsman(ship)		76f, 142, 146	Ego		4
Creation	57-58	3, 5, 8, 12, 14, 15, 17f, 21f, 23, 27-29, 31f, 33, 39, 41, 44, 45, 47, 54-56, 62, 71, 76f, 82, 84 and on	End of the Ages	133-134	27, 41, 45, 46, 77, 88, 90, 99, 103, 105, 108, 116, 124, 129
Creator		23, 24, 133f	Endure, Endurance		10, 29, 40, 63, 78, 80
Criticism		92, 97, 132	Enemy, Enemies	8	27, 28, 47, 115, 131, 133, 152, 160
Cross		117, 132, 152, 160	Enoch		79, 112
Dark, Darkness, the Dark Side	89-90	41, 45, 48, 50, 53, 67, 86, 87, 91, 99, 101, 113, 115, 119, 128, 147, 152, 157, 160	Environment		66, 67f, 143
David, King		19, 78, 79, 112, 135	Error	94-95	26, 96, 97, 127, 128, 137
Dawn, Dawning		89f, 115, 123, 158, 160	Eternal Father	23	64, 145
Death	47, 48, 103-104	5, 12, 18, 19, 21, 25, 27, 29, 33f, 37, 39, 40, 43, 49, 51, 52, 54f, 56, 57f, 60, 61, 72, 75, 76, 79, 83, 90, 92f, 96, 97, 105f, 117, 122, 124f, 126, 127 and on	Eternal God		46, 64, 82, 84, 116
Deception, Deceit, Deceiver (see also Lie, Liar)	52-53	20, 37, 39, 50f, 67f, 75, 87, 94, 104, 113, 126, 127, 128, 138, 150f	Eternal Life	103	14, 27 f, 29, 38, 45, 47, 50f, 82, 88, 91, 92f, 97, 103f, 105f, 122, 123, 144
Demons	50-51	52f, 103, 106, 114, 137	Eternal Nature or Character of God		9-12, 87, 127, 128
Demonic		153	Eternal Purpose		5, 29, 39
Depression		43	Eternal Perspective		10, 45, 46, 75, 84, 94, 114, 121, 123, 142, 145f, 152f, 158
Despair		13, 29, 32, 43f, 128, 129, 141, 159f	Eternal Spirit		94, 103, 145
Destroy, Destroyed, Destroyer	5, 98	12, 39, 41, 45, 47, 58, 75, 99-107, 116, 122, 134, 145, 148, 152f, 157	Eternal Torment		28, 86, 104
Determination		44	Eternity, Eternal (other than above)	46	27, 74, 92, 103f, 107, 119, 130, 158
Devil, satan	8	5, 12, 14, 22, 26-28, 33, 39, 41, 44, 45, 47, 51, 52f, 54, 59, 68, 117, 153	Evangelist		136, 137
Diet		15f, 18, 22, 56, 143	Eve		64
Dimensions		50f, 61, 134	Evil	13-14	16, 18, 26, 41, 47-56, 59f, 67, 72-75, 77, 80, 86, 93, 99, 103f, 106f, 116, 119, 124, 127, 128, 131f, 137f, 146, 150f, 159
Discernment, Discern, Discerning the Body	54-55	6, 53, 65, 74, 79, 86, 95, 111, 115, 121, 126, 131f, 136, 138, 149, 153	Evil (see also Sin)		
Disciple		12, 54, 152	Evil Nature		80, 103f, 107, 127, 152f
Discipline, Testing	29	8, 11, 12, 30, 33	Evil One		95, 98, 141, 145, 148, 153
Discouragement		43	Evil Deeds / Works		11, 56, 75, 124
Disease		15f, 68, 106, 130	Evil Spirits		65, 108, 128, 138
Doctrine	63-64	55, 57, 85f, 92, 94f, 96, 97, 102, 135f, 137, 140	Evolve, Evolution		57
Dominion		31, 58, 67, 71, 84, 100	Exercise		16, 48, 65, 137
			Expectations		4, 34, 85
			Fair, Fairness		10, 11, 27
			Faith	25-26, 72-73	3-6, 12-14, 20f, 29, 30, 32, 33, 38-40, 43f, 46, 48, 51, 53, 59, 63, 65, 68, 76f, 78, 80, 86f, 90-98, 105, 108, 111f, 116, 119f, 125, 126, 129, 130, 137f, 140, 143, 145f, 149, 150f



Faithful(ness)	72-73	21, 29, 40, 71, 79, 80, 95, 98, 101, 130, 131, 133, 139, 158	Free, Set Free	14	16, 19f, 27, 31f, 39- 41, 47, 52, 55, 56, 59f, 62, 65, 67f, 74f, 76, 95, 97, 98, 100, 103f, 105f, 114, 127, 130, 132, 139, 140, 147, 149, 150f, 160
False gods (see also Idols)	20	39, 84, 92, 100, 111, 113, 114, 134, 135, 152f	Free will	59-60	8, 61, 62, 75, 153
Fasting	148-149	15, 16	Freedom	61, 97	27, 52, 56, 59f, 62, 87, 99, 102, 127, 134, 135, 139, 140, 141, 150f, 159f
Father (human)		21, 41, 98, 156	Fruit	95	6, 15, 18, 25, 27, 28, 41, 48, 50, 58, 85, 105f, 111, 135, 151
Father of Lies		33, 52, 75, 98, 153	Fruits of the Spirit	95	25, 43, 97
Father's Heart	98	104, 105f, 113, 133	Futility	56	15, 21, 27, 28, 32, 33, 43, 47, 52, 58, 60, 62, 71, 75, 76, 79, 97, 114, 140, 160
Father's Will		3, 5, 33, 119	Glory	3	6, 8, 10, 14, 17, 22, 23, 28-34, 41, 45-49, 53, 57f, 61, 63f, 66, 71, 72f, 74f, 76, 79, 82-85, 88, and on
Father, Heavenly		20, 23, 31, 34, 64, 84, 89, 145, 153, many others	Golgotha		14, 20, 25, 34, 72, 88, 103
Father (address)		used throughout	Good News	150-153	28, 57, 160
Fathered, Begot (Father as a verb)	98	101, 104, 105f, 114, 121, 127, 144, 145, 150	Gospel	28	56, 57, 80, 86, 95
Fear	137-139	8, 12, 25f, 28, 29, 33, 39, 40, 48, 50f, 56, 58, 63f, 67f, 71, 72, 74, 80, 81, 86, 94f, 96, 97, 100, 103, 108, 115, 127, 132, 140, 143, 146, 151, 157	Gospel of Kingdom	20	34, 60, 91, 94, 96, 150f
Fear of the Lord	8	23, 25, 28, 63, 74, 121, 135f, 137f, 146	Government	65-66	67f, 100
Fellowship	42	23, 30, 32, 48, 75, 76, 102, 118, 119, 138, 150	Grace	9, 41	7, 10-13, 23, 24, 27, 30, 42, 47, 48, 55, 59, 61, 77, 78, 87, 90, 93, 105, 107, 111, 125-129, 140, 150, 158f
Fertilizer		90, 106f	Greed		51, 66, 67
Finances, Money		66, 67f	Growth, Maturing	45	7, 13f, 18, 24, 30, 34, 37, 41, 42, 44-48, 50, 53, 55, 56, 59, 60, 63f, 65f, 68, 71, 72, 74, 76f, 78-90, 97, 100f, 105f, 107f, and on
Finger, Fingernail		59, 117, 120, 145f,	Habit		4, 13, 140
Fire, Hell Fire (see also Lake of Fire and Baptism of Fire)	4, 28-30, 157	8, 40, 41, 44, 45, 47, 49, 58, 61, 72, 90, 91, 98, 103f, 124f, 127, 128, 134	Hades		45, 115
First Fruits	123-125	18, 29, 126, 127	Happiness	22	24, 27, 37, 43, 50, 62, 65, 114, 128, 133, 141
Flesh, Human	45	17, 32, 43, 46, 47, 54, 58, 79, 83, 111f, 118, 121, 132, 136, 148f, 160	Hard Hearts, Hardened	78	9, 10, 12, 27-29, 40, 41, 60, 72, 79, 80, 85f, 87f, 90, 98-100, 103, 118, 124, 126, 127, 128, 132
Flesh (Sin) Nature, Self-Nature, Self-Love Nature Inherited Nature, Human Nature	4	13f, 20, 25f, 27, 34, 37f, 40-43, 52f, 55, 56, 65, 67, 71, 72f, 95, 98, 102, 103f, 107, 113, 121, 126- 132, 140, 145, 148f, 152, 160	Harvest		6, 18, 45, 123f
Force	8	4, 19, 25f, 31, 51, 61, 89, 120, 127, 143	Hate, Hatred	8, 152-153	10, 39, 47, 51, 60, 66, 67, 86, 95, 104, 107, 127, 128, 131f, 137f
Forever	17, 133-134	10, 13f, 28, 34, 40, 43-48, 52f, 78, 107, 123 and on	Head, Godhead	82	15, 34, 55, 59f, 63, 82-85, 101f, 105f, 113, 131, 135, 138, 141, 145, 147
Forgive, Forgiveness	78	5, 6, 13, 20, 41, 54f, 57, 66, 77, 88, 95, 98, 104, 107, 111f, 121, 122, 124, 126, 127, 138, 140, 157			
Foundation	57	33, 59, 67, 71, 76f, 87, 94, 139, 140, 142f, 145, 158f			

Healing, Healer, Health, Healthy	15-16	17f, 21f, 23, 27, 31, 33f, 37, 44, 47, 54f, 56, 68, 100f, 105f, 114, 117f, 128, 138, 141f, 147, 148	Judge, Judgment, Judging	12, 40	7f, 9, 10, 13, 27-29, 54f, 57, 60, 68, 72, 74, 85, 98, 101, 123, 126, 127, 129, 131, 148, 151, 157
Heart (see also Father's Heart, Open Hearts, Pure Hearts, and Hard Hearts)	4	3, 6, 10, 13f, 16, 17, 19, 24, 25f, 27, 28, 31f, 33f, 37f, 39, 42, 43, 51, 55, 58, 60-62, 65, 72f, 74, 76, 78-81, 85f, 87f, 90, 91, 95-104, 111f, and on	Justice, Injustice	11	8-10, 12, 20, 28, 33f, 40, 65, 67, 98, 139, 152, 157
Heaven, Heavens, Heavenlies	49, 128	8, 17, 19, 40, 45, 46, 48, 50f, 56, 58, 78, 80, 81f, 101, 124, 133f, 140, 153	Kill, Murder		15, 20f, 41, 56, 59, 75, 92, 107, 130, 131, 135
Hell, Hellfire (see also Fire, Hades, Torment)	49, 128	8, 27, 28, 46, 48, 50, 72, 75, 90, 97-99, 101, 122, 123f, 127, 152f	Kingdom of God, Kingdom of Heaven The Kingdom (see also Gospel of the Kingdom, and Building the Kingdom)	67-68	4-6, 13, 15f, 17, 20, 21, 23, 26-34, 40, 43, 45, 50f, 56, 58, 65f, 72, 74, 76f, 80, 81, 83, 85f, 94, 96, 97, 100, 104, 108, 111, 114f, 117, 119f, 124, 126, 130, 135-137, 140-142, 147-153, 157f
Holy Spirit		See Spirit, Holy	Labor		see Work
Holy, Holiness	121	8, 13, 18, 21, 31f, 40, 58, 71, 79, 83, 85, 90, 91, 92f, 94, 100, 105, 114, 118, 122, 128, 125, 132, 136, 139-141, 151f, 157	Lake of Fire	127	9, 27, 45, 47, 49, 72, 103f, 106f, 124f, 126-129, 152f
Home	133-134	68, 77, 98, 111, 140	Lamb, Lamb Sacrifice	123-125	58, 83f, 126, 127, 130, 134, 160
Human Nature		71 (see also Flesh Nature)	Law	19-22, 141-143	10-13, 26, 27, 30, 31, 39, 44, 54, 57, 60-62, 64, 67, 74, 77, 82-84, 89, 91, 93, 98, 122, 129, 140, 159
Humility	6	23, 82, 87f, 116	Liberty		60
Husband & Wife		17f, 22, 64	Lie (Falsehood)	22	33, 39, 45, 49, 52, 66, 75, 77, 80, 87, 91, 99, 108, 113, 115, 128, 132, 135, 145-147, 149, 151, 152f, 157, 160
Hypocrite		151	Lies, Lying, Liar (see also Father of Lies)		25, 51, 58, 80, 115, 124, 138, 147, 153
Idol, Idolatry	20	13f, 25, 51, 153, 157	Lie, Lies, Lying (as in to lie down or lie in wait)		25, 51, 58, 80, 115, 124, 138, 147, 153
Image of God	72	3, 33, 54, 59, 61, 64, 71, 77, 83, 87, 103, 119, 122, 152f	Life (divine), Spirit Life (see also Book of Life, Eternal Life, Resurrection Life)	47, 103- 104	3, 4, 6, 17f, 20f, 23, 33f, 37f, 41, 46, 49, 51, 54f, 56, 57, 60, 61, 67f, 71-73, 75, 76, 79, 90-96, 105f, 118, 120, 122, 123, 126, 128, 132, 136, 144 and on
Independent Self		See Self, Independent	Life (human) Physical Life	17-18	3, 4, 6, 8, 13, 15, 20f, 25f, 28, 33f, 38, 41, 43, 45-47, 51, 56, 61, 62, 65, 68, 77, 78, 86, 87f, 90-93, 96, 97, 100, 105f, 111, 113, 115f, 119-121, 126-128 and on
Infinite	75	9, 55, 60, 71, 77, 86, 87, 90, 91, 111, 116, 121, 128, 139, 149, 150, 157f	Life of the Ages	123	105f, 127, 148, 157
Innocent, Innocence	27	52, 58, 77	Life (other uses)		21f, 45, 46, 47, 57, 73, 89, 123f, 126, 127, 138, 146, 148-150, 152
Intentions, Motives	73	12, 18, 33, 80, 81, 99-101, 116, 131, 134, 139, 153	Judas		75
Intercession	148-149	23, 34, 160	Jesus (except as a direct address)	23	44, 56, 61, 63f, 66, 71, 73, 76f, 78, 81f, 83f, 96, 101f, 105f, 112-116, 118, 120-125, 127-129, 133-135, 142, 150f, 157f, 160
Jealousy		20, 39, 80, 97	Jesus (address)		used throughout
Joy, Joyfulness, Enjoy, Joyous	24, 43- 44, 117-118	3-9, 12, 14-23, 26-29, 31-34, 37-40, 46-50, 52, 57, 58, 62, 71-80, 84, 87, 89, 95, 96, 133f, many more			

Light	89-90	32, 41, 45, 61, 67, 74, 86, 87, 91, 96, 101, 115, 119, 121, 127, 128, 136, 140, 147, 157f	Miracles, Signs	44	25, 85, 88, 107, 115, 124, 143
Light (easy to bear)		28, 33, 76	Mission	79	18, 48, 80, 81, 126, 136
Live	17-18	3, 6, 13, 20, 27, 28, 37, 43, 53, 65, 72, 79, 88, 93, 100f, 104, 105f, 114, 120, 121, 134, 157f	Missionary		143
Living	17-18	5, 7, 13f, 18, 22, 31, 37, 48, 55, 61, 76f, 100f, 106, 108, 116, 130, 132	Molecule		82, 84, 85, 105f, 120, 146
Living Word	19	3, 15f, 32, 54, 57, 63, 91, 93, 97, 104, 106, 112, 114, 132, 135f, 137, 151	Money		66, 68
Lord, Lordship (except when used as a direct address)	87-88	4, 8, 14, 15f, 20, 23, 25f, 34, 47, 60, 63f, 90, 96, 97, 99, 119f, 121, 123, 127, 131f, 138, 145, 149, 150, 157f	Moses		79, 112
Lost (as in the sinner)	28	10, 59, 75, 97, 117, 122, 125, 134, 135, 160	Mother		15, 21
Love	7-8	5, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15, 19f, 23, 24, 27-29, 30, 33, 37, 39-44, 48, 49, 55, 57f, 61, 64, 67f, 73 and more	Mystery	96	59, 64, 103
Lucifer	47	45, 96, 104f, 153	Name(s) of God	23	13f, 21, 38, 43f, 46, 51, 63, 79, 81f, 90, 97, 123, 124f, 140
Lust of the flesh	7	4, 34, 37, 51, 52, 66, 67, 73, 80	Name, Human		124
Man, Human, Humanity	71	4, 5, 10, 12, 13, 15, 19f, 23-28, 30, 32, 45-47, 49-51, 54, 61, 63, 66 and on	Natural Law(s)		11, 19, 22, 54, 57
Marriage	64	17, 25, 83f, 96, 101, 111f, 118	Nature of God	7-8	3, 9-11, 14, 18-23, 27, 39, 46, 47, 51, 53, 58, 59, 64, 67f, 71, 72, 77, 81-85, 89-91, 93, 96, 103, 105f, 116-121, 130, 139-141, 144, 146, 148, 150f, 158
Master	4	23, 62, 76f, 87f, 142, 146,	Nature of Man		71 (see also Flesh Nature)
Maturity, Immaturity	18	10, 13, 45, 55, 77, 78, 81, 84, 85, 105f, 118, 132, 134, 137, 149, 151	Noah		58, 112
Medicine, Drugs	68	16, 41, 67f	Nutrition		15f (see also healing)
Meek, Teachable	81	11, 12, 23, 27, 28, 47, 129	Obedience, Obey, Disobedient	19-20	11, 15f, 19f, 27, 28, 32f, 34, 40, 43f, 47, 51, 53, 63, 65, 74, 78, 82, 88, 114, 130, 144, 157
Mercy	10	7, 11, 12, 23, 24, 28, 30, 31f, 42, 47, 73, 78, 86, 87, 93, 98, 112, 126-129, 139, 157, 159	Oneness, One God, One Body in Christ (see also Unity)	85-86, 101-102 145-147	7, 8, 17f, 20f, 23, 28 32, 33f, 39, 42, 44, 46, 54f, 58, 63f, 71, 72, 79, 81f, 84, 87, 89, 96, 99, 105f, 111f, 118, 119f, 126, 127, 131, 135, 142, 150, 160
Mind of Christ	111-113	18, 33, 39, 46, 64, 111f, 114f, 148	Openness, Open Hearts, Open Mind, Open Eyes, Open Understanding	78	9, 10, 17, 21, 24, 25f, 29, 32, 33f, 48, 50f, 61, 72, 74, 79, 80, 81, 86, 88, 89, 90, 93, 94f, 100, 102, 122, 129, 132 many more
Mind (Human), Intellect	111-113	3, 6, 13, 19, 24, 39, 46, 52f, 54, 63, 67, 73, 75, 85, 87, 96, 94f, 96, 111f, 128, 134, 148, 150, 157	Oppression		52, 66, 67
			Pain (see also Suffering)	11, 27 117-118	29, 30, 33, 40, 44, 81, 83, 133, 141f, 157, 159f
			Paradise	129	126
			Pastor		136, 137
			Patience	117-118	29, 39, 77, 95, 98, 99, 117f, 150, 157
			Paul / Saul		29, 59, 90, 96, 118, 145
			Peace	5, 39, 99	15, 22-25, 29, 30, 31f, 33, 45, 48, 49, 51, 56, 58, 62, 63, 65, 67, 72, 77, 87, 89, 93, 95-97, 128, 131, 133f, 137f, 141, 149

Perfect, Perfection	5	8, 11, 14, 15f, 17f, 19f, 22, 24, 27, 29, 30-32, 34, 42, 45, 46, 50f, 53, 54-60, 63f, 67f, 71, 72, 76f, 79, 82-86, 89f, 99, 100f more	Purpose, Purposelessness	13-14	5, 7, 9, 13f, 17f, 20f, 24, 29, 33, 39, 45, 58, 60, 61, 64, 65f, 68, 71, 72f, 75, 93, 100f, 106, 114f, 120, 127, 136, 146, 148f, 157f
Perish, Perishing		12, 104, 107f	Rebellion	13-14	7, 13f, 25, 27, 39, 40, 45, 51, 52, 60, 62, 75, 86, 90, 98, 104, 116, 122, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131
Persecution		97	Reconcile, Reconciled	8	32, 34, 41, 97, 98, 103, 127, 147, 152, 160
Perspective	45-46	10, 30, 37, 40, 49f, 57, 59, 60, 62, 65, 75, 84, 85, 91, 92, 94, 100, 114f, 120, 121, 123f, 129, 130, 133f, 137, 140, 141f, 145f, 150f, 158	Reconciliation, Reconciling	32	29, 33, 39, 56, 86, 99, 147, 149
Physical Body (see also Body of Christ)	17-18, 105-108	15f, 27, 29, 31f, 37, 48, 51, 54, 76, 82, 83f, 85, 87, 96, 113, 114f, 117f, 120, 123f, 125-127, 129, 134, 141, 145f, 148f	Recording System		124, 130
Plan of/for the Ages	5, 120	18, 42, 57-59, 67, 73, 75, 82, 118, 123, 149, 150f	Refuse, Garbage		106
Pleasure	24, 62	7, 14, 21, 27, 32, 41, 48, 54, 56, 76, 78, 80, 96, 98, 100, 122, 134, 151, 159	Relationship, Kingdom Relationships	23, 81-82	5, 7, 19f, 24, 25, 33, 45, 48, 51, 52, 56, 57, 65, 68, 70, 85f, 88, 91, 100f, 106, 111, 118, 122, 123, 142
Politics		65 f, 138	Religion, Religious	73, 100-102	38, 54, 82, 84, 96, 112, 122, 133, 135f, 137, 140, 148, 151
Possess, Possessions		4, 135	Repentance	6-8	10, 12, 13, 24, 41, 61, 78, 90, 98, 129
Power, Empowered	6, 8, 13-14, 88	3, 4, 10, 16, 19f, 23-27, 29, 30, 32, 33, 37f, 39, 43, 45, 51, 54, 56-58, 66, 71, 74, 79, 99, 105 and on	Rest (see also Sabbath Rest)	5	16, 17f, 32, 39, 49, 52, 57, 76, 99, 121, 123, 158
Praise	3	40, 50, 81, 104, 131, 146, 158	Resurrect		103f
Prayer, Pray (see also Intercession)	37-38, 111-113	6, 23, 28, 32, 39, 55, 62, 65, 120, 127, 132, 148	Reverence, Respect	139	21f, 23, 63, 121
Predestination		61	Reward	11	21, 105, 116, 123
Present, Past, Future	45-46	6, 13, 20, 24, 27, 29, 30, 33, 42, 50, 53, 57, 67, 71, 82, 89, 93, 94f, 97, 105, 114, 111, 116, 122, 123, 133f, 136, 137, 140, 149, 153, 157	Righteous, Righteousness	4	5, 6, 8, 9, 11, 12, 14, 20, 25, 27, 29, 30, 34, 39, 40, 42, 45, 51, 53, 58, 60, 63, 65f, 67f, 74f, 76-79, 82, 85, 90, 97, 112, 120, 124f, 127, 130f, 134, 135f & on
Pride	82	26, 45, 51, 52, 64, 68, 71, 75, 84, 90, 95, 96, 100, 104, 122, 128, 130, 133, 151	Rights		4, 34
Prophecy, Prophet, Prophesy	86	12, 23, 29, 32, 89, 91, 116, 136, 137, 145f, 160	Robots		74f, 114
Punish, Punishment	11-12	8, 28, 30, 40, 45, 60, 66, 67, 71, 86, 118, 127, 129, 131, 138, 141	Rule, Ruler (see also Sovereignty)	34, 66	18, 25, 40, 45, 52, 56, 71, 74, 82, 87f, 94, 96, 104, 113, 115, 125, 126, 129, 134, 150
Purity, Pure Hearts	80	42, 51, 81, 96, 100f, 107, 112, 116	Sabbath, Sabbath Rest	31-34, 140	5, 16, 21, 29, 39, 141f, 149
			Sad, Sadness	43-44	3, 28, 56, 73, 75, 83, 88, 112, 138
			Saint	20, 73, 77	8, 12, 18, 20f, 29, 34, 50, 54f, 61, 66, 67f, 71, 76f, 81, 89f, 91, 93, 96, 101f, 105, 108, 112, 125, 126, 131f, 136, 137, 143, 145, 149, 153

Salvation (see also Save, Savior)	122	9, 10, 14, 28, 55, 59f, 73, 98, 112, 114f, 125, 126, 127, 138	Soul	105-108	13, 16, 17, 19, 24, 27, 28, 31, 37, 49, 52, 54, 59, 61, 87, 98, 99, 104, 116, 117, 128, 131, 135f, 137f, 140, 141, 145, 148f, 153f, 159
Samuel		112	Sovereign, Sovereignty	74-75	21, 27, 38, 55, 59f, 67, 71, 82, 85, 97, 99, 104, 105, 119f, 121, 123, 140, 148, 149, 160
Satan, the Devil	8	5, 7f, 12, 14, 22, 26-28, 33, 39, 41, 44, 45, 47, 51, 52f, 54, 59, 68, 74f, 80, 87, 98, 103-108, 111f, 119, 121, 123-127, 130, 134, 135, 145, 151, 157f	Spirit (divine), Holy Spirit, God's Spirit	105-108	3, 7, 16, 17f, 19f, 23, 25f, 32, 33, 37f, 39, 43, 45, 52f, 59, 62, 63f, 65f, 71, 73, 74, 76f, 78, 79, 81, 86, 88, 91- 104, 111f, 117-120, 135, many more
Saul / Paul		29, 59, 90, 96, 118, 145	Spirit (other uses not referring to God)	31, 50-51	3, 15f, 37f, 43, 48, 52f, 54, 59, 73, 76, 86, 93, 94f, 99, 100f, 103f, 111f, 116, 128, 131, 133, 140, 141, 145, 148f, 150f
Save, Savior (see also Salvation)	9, 122	13f, 23, 28, 41, 55, 83, 104, 112, 114, 122, 123f, 129, 147, 153, 160	Spiritism, the Occult or Psychic realms	26	22, 50
Scripture, the Bible	92-93	19, 29, 46, 78, 91, 94f, 96, 105, 116, 123, 130, 133f, 136, 137, 145, 151	Spiritual (see also Warfare, Spiritual)	37	16, 17, 19, 22, 26, 47, 54, 78, 79, 94, 105f, 117, 131, 135, 149
Secret Place, the	53	12, 38, 39, 125	Spiritual Realms, Spirit Realms (see also Heaven)	49-51	45, 47, 48, 58, 84, 105f, 124, 133f, 141f, 150
Seed, Sprouting	15, 90	25f, 44, 54, 76, 107, 111, 131	Spiritual Warfare	52	See Warfare, Spiritual
Self-control		67, 95	Suffering (see also Pain)	27, 117- 118	12, 15, 17, 19, 21, 28, 29, 30, 33f, 40, 41, 47, 56, 58, 60, 71, 74, 82, 83f, 98, 114, 122, 124, 127, 129, 135, 143, 147, 159f
Self, independent, Self Nature, Self-centered, Selfish, and all the Self sins	52-53	4, 7, 13, 18, 25f, 27, 34, 41, 51, 55, 59, 62, 66, 68, 72f, 75, 77, 84, 85, 87f, 100, 103f, 105f, 108, 113, 116, 126-133, 145, 150f, 157, 159, 160	Sword	131-132	8, 40, 99, 134, 152f
Serpent		111	Teachable, Meek	81	11, 12, 23, 27, 28, 47, 129
Servant	23, 127	40, 104, 130, 135, 139, 143	Teacher		8, 136, 137
Sheep (& Goats)	126	117, 135f, 137, 149	Temperance		16
Shepherd	135-136	93, 126, 137f,	Temple	17-18	77, 83f, 129, 141f, 148
Sickness, Illness	141-143	27, 44, 54f, 68, 107f, 114, 128	Temptation	13	19, 22, 25, 27, 43, 48, 51, 72, 82, 83, 102
Sin, Sinner	13-14, 83-84	6, 8-12, 15f, 19-25, 27-29, 31, 34, 39-41, 43, 45, 53- 61, 64-67, 73, 75-77, 79, 86, 87, 90, 92 and on	Ten Commandments		19-22
Sin (Self) Nature		See Self or Flesh Nature	Testing (see also Discipline, Trial)	29	13, 17, 25, 34, 40, 44, 75, 83, 151
Slave, Enslave	139	8, 14, 19, 68, 127, 135, 137f,	Thanks, Thankfulness. Thanksgiving	144	5, 12, 19, 29, 30, 38, 40, 41, 44, 51, 57f, 59, 76, 107, 117, 127, 138, 141f, 145, 148, 150, 158, 159
Sleep	48	18, 31, 54, 108, 115f, 133	Thoughts	3, 113	33, 42, 50, 56, 99, 131, 144, 153
Soil, Dirt		61, 106			
Soldier, Warrior		71, 99			
Son (except not as a direct address), Son(s) of God, Sonship	114-116	10-12, 13f, 18, 22, 23, 29, 32, 38-42, 44, 56, 58, 59, 64, 65f, 74, 76f, 79, 81f, 83f, 87, 98, 104, 105, 108, 118, 119, 122, 123, 130, 131, 134-136, 148f, 150f, 158, 160			

Time, Temporal (see also Age)	45	5, 9, 10, 13, 17f, 19, 27, 29, 32, 33f, 40, 46, 49, 50, 56, 57, 61, 71, 75, 81f, 88, 92f, 94, 108, 114f, 116, 123f, 126, 127, 129, 130, 133f and on	Unknown		48, 138
Space-Time Realm, Physical Realm	17-18, 32	19f, 33, 42, 50, 58, 67f, 76, 84, 96, 105, 114, 118, 123, 130, 133f, 149, 150, 157	Vanity, Vain		21, 38, 68, 79, 80, 160
Torment	28	50, 86, 97, 98, 104, 122, 123, 128, 129, 138	Vengeance	128	40, 131
Tradition	97	10, 37, 135f, 137	Victory	14, 32	29, 40, 49, 51, 52f, 57f, 76, 79, 93, 103f, 108, 119, 125, 132, 134, 135, 138, 143, 145, 152f, 160
Tragedy		15, 41, 75	Warfare (Spiritual)	52-53	51, 59, 65, 153
Transportation		66, 67f,	Ways of God	3, 33	27, 30, 38, 42, 44, 45, 60, 65, 67f, 71, 74f, 77, 78, 80, 84, 85, 89f, 91, 107, 117, 119, 129, 141, 146
Trap, Snare		62, 63, 68, 139, 147, 153	Weak, Weakness	6, 14	4, 15, 32, 45, 51, 54f, 71, 73, 79, 88, 91, 94, 96, 101, 121, 123, 132, 140, 148f,
Travail		29, 147	Wedding	17	49, 64, 79, 82, 125, 127, 142
Treasure	78, 142-143	65, 84, 96, 124, 145, 151, 158	Welfare		68
Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil	113	13, 91, 111, 135, 150, 153	Will of God	6, 26	3-6, 12, 25, 37f, 33, 43, 53, 59f, 71, 78, 95, 104, 119, 135, 148
Tree of Life	105		Wisdom	12	4, 8, 11-13, 15f, 21f, 23, 28-30, 32, 33f, 38, 41, 44-50, 53-55, 58, 62, 63, 65f, 67f, 71, 72, 74, 78, 82, 83, 85, 86, 89-93, 95, 96, 98, 104-108, 111, 121, 129, 136, 137f, 141f, 146, 150f, 157f
Trial, Tribulation	125-125	11, 12, 29	Witchcraft, Sorcery		51
Trinity		63f,	Work, Works, Labor	31-34	3, 5, 9, 11, 16, 20f, 25f, 45, 50, 52f, 56, 57, 62, 66, 68, 71, 77, 78, 93, 94, 98, 104, 108, 111, 115f, 117, 120, 123, 133f, 136, 143, 145, 149, 150f, 157
Trust, Trustworthy	16, 22, 139, 157	14, 28, 38, 39, 43f, 64, 68, 73, 80, 89, 91, 92f, 97, 100, 102, 121, 124, 129	Worship (see also Praise)	3, 119- 120	8, 19f, 23, 32, 38, 43f, 62, 81, 92, 100, 111, 127, 129, 133, 146, 158
Truth	91	22, 23, 28, 33, 40, 63f, 67f, 72, 75, 77, 82, 85f, 87, 89f, 92, 94-97, 101, 104, 119, 131, 137f, 146, 149, 151f, 158			
Truth-Seeker		123f, 126, 127			
Tyrannical		66			
Unbelief	26	24, 51, 78, 80, 81f, 93, 95, 116, 139, 150, 157			
Unity, Union (see also Oneness)	145-147	18, 26, 42, 56, 64, 83, 89, 100f, 105, 118, 120, 134			
Universal Data Banks		124			
Universe	45, 120	5, 19, 33, 39, 44, 46, 50, 54, 99, 120, 121, 124, 139, 141, 144, 147, 153, 157-159			







**Who am I, and what claims do I make for myself and this book?**

In the eyes of the world, I am a nobody. I have no earthly titles, such as Reverend or Ph.D. I have no official theological degrees, positions, or ministries. However, in the eyes of God I am “of the Lord Jesus Christ.” I am thankful, for that is more than enough.

That means I am a “believer,” one of those rare individuals who believes God’s word enough to actually try to live it – yes, even to the point of believing that I am dead to sin and to the law of sin and death, crucified with Jesus, buried with him at Golgotha, raised up with him, and seated with him in the heavenlies in his glory, and that now it is only the life of my Lord Jesus Christ living in and through me, I am his bondsman to righteousness, and I do only those good works which God prepared beforehand for me to walk in. This is not a boast, it is just a statement of truth in agreement with the word of God (which is truth), for it is not by anything good in or of myself, but only by the great mercy and grace of him who loves me and gave himself for me that I can even say such a truth. In fact, this is also the position of all true believers, by faith in the Lord Jesus, as revealed in Romans 6, Galatians 2:19-21, Ephesians 2:5-10, Colossians 3:1-17, and all throughout the Scriptures.

This makes it easy for me, for I don’t have to defend myself or this book. It is entirely up to him who works through me to do whatever he wants to do with any of his works. So I make no particular claims either for myself or for this book. I’m not holier or wiser than any other true believer in Christ Jesus. Likewise this book is no holier or wiser than any other book, tract, letter, speech, or sermon that any other true believer in Jesus Christ has ever written or given under the inspiration and filling of the Holy Spirit.

Therefore, don’t just accept what I’ve written here. But if the Lord Jesus Christ speaks by his Holy Spirit to your heart through this book, please hear him. He has spoken to me and assured me that this book will be a blessing to many true believers who “have the ears to hear.” He may likewise speak to you through it, or he may not. And he may confirm to your spirit some of what I’ve written, and he may not. He is God – he gets to do that. As CS Lewis liked to say, “He is not a tame lion, you know.”

**How does God speak to me, and how are you to know that it is really God?**

God speaks to me primarily through the ears of my spirit. He has taken many years training my own spirit to recognize his voice and training my mind to know what he is saying by his Spirit. (See John 15:15, 16:12, 1 Corinthians 2:16...) Please believe me, this book was not written by some mystical “high” experience, or by “automatic writing” or “inner spirit guides.” These are my words, based on what I believe the Holy Spirit has spoken to my heart through Scripture and during prayer, meditation, and communion with him.

I hope that only encourages you also to learn to know the voice of the great Shepherd as he speaks by his Spirit to his precious sheep. (John 10:1-5) If this book is just a mental exercise in doctrine, then it is a failure. But if it points you to a living relationship with the living word, the Lord Jesus Christ (John 1:1,14), there can be no greater success, for it is only his anointing that teaches you all things. (1 John 2:20-29) Thus only he can open your heart to his truth, whether hidden within this book, some other written or spoken word, or whatever he gives you.

**Am I equating this book with The Holy Bible?**

No. God may do that someday, but I could never do that, for I love the Holy Bible too much to even try to compete. The Holy Bible has stood the test of time (Proverbs 30:5-6), and is so vast in the magnitude and scope of its blessing that it may be that nothing will ever compete. Yet I do believe that God did not stop speaking at the completion of the New Testament. Though he does build four-square upon the foundation that he has laid, he himself does not change! He still does nothing but what he first reveals it through his spokesmen. (Amos 3:7) Those saints who are filled with his Holy Spirit (Ephesians 5:18) still preach and prophesy a living and abiding word of God (1 Peter 1:23, 25), the errors and abuses of those who preach a “different gospel” (Galatians 1:6-12) notwithstanding.

**I believe that *The Gospel of the Kingdom* is built foursquare on the foundation of the Old and New Testaments; I pray that the Holy Spirit will confirm that to you as well. I could not prove to a skeptic that God speaks to me, for this book was not written for the skeptical. But then, though I believe in my heart that the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments of the Holy Bible are the inspired and inerrant word of God, I could not prove that to a skeptic, either! One can only receive God’s living word by faith when he becomes a believer and it becomes a revelation to his heart. I hope and pray that is what it is to you.**

**How did this book ever get written, anyway?**

Well, that’s a rather long story. I’ll start at the beginning, and try to keep it as brief as I can

I was “born a Christian,” baptized as an infant, and raised to know that I belonged to God, and I don’t remember ever doubting that. I first dealt with my sin at the age of thirteen, though a supernatural experience that left me with an unshakeable faith that God loves me and has forgiven me, and ever since that time I have never doubted that, either.

Oh, I read my Bible and went to church, but I was still a lukewarm, double-minded Christian, whose faith was mostly mental. So God sent us to a Pentecostal style church, where we learned to worship “in spirit” rather than just “in truth.” (John 4:23-24) I went through their “school of prophets” and “training for intercessors,” and in the process, learned to know the voice of the “Good Shepherd.” (John 10:4 ff)

It was like I was at a feast, stuffed full of the principles of the kingdom of God. One day I was in worship, overflowing with gratitude, and I asked the Lord, “What do you want me to do with all the fantastic wisdom you’ve given me?”

Without a moment’s hesitation he answered, “I’m going to write *the Gospel of the Kingdom* through you.” With those words came a picture of a big leather book with many volumes inside it, something like a new New Testament.

It hit me so hard I staggered and almost fell. I grabbed the bridge rail and answered shakily, “But Lord, you know I can’t do that.”

He answered just as swiftly, “I know. But I can do it through you. Will you let me?”

“Yes, Lord.” I finally responded. That took a big stretch of my faith. But I still had a problem. I worked for Boeing (as an aerospace engineer). So I added, “But before I start that, you’ll have to get me out of Boeing.” He assured me that he would get me out at the right time.

Years passed. I never forgot that dramatic encounter, and even tried working toward it, but still seemed permanently stuck in Boeing. Then one day a Christian friend, whom I'll call Al, contacted me from Boeing Computer Services. Al wanted me to join his tiny group of Macintosh Computer systems analysts. It sounded like a lot of fun - certainly better than working on nuclear missiles! I told him I'd love to, if he could get my boss in the Aerospace Group to let me go - which seemed impossible to me at the time.

Well, Al pulled some strings and got me into BCS. That was a big step, as Al was a committed Christian, and through him God began teaching me how to really live my faith - even at work. That was important, as it was the one thing that enabled me, a few years later, to actually leave Boeing entirely and go to work "for the Lord."

As you can imagine, my finances took a huge hit, again stretching my faith. The miracles began stacking up, as God continued to provide. I started a "self-publishing" business, helped a few people with their books, and even wrote one of my own, but that went nowhere. However, one of the books I helped to edit and publish hit me pretty hard. It was *The Seven Spirits of God*, by J. Preston Eby. God used it to transform my entire concept of "working for the Lord" into a life of just "letting him work through me."

Now I was finally ready to write *The Gospel of the Kingdom*. But I couldn't. Living at home, in a tiny house with my wife and three children, in a busy community which included my parents, grandparents, and several siblings and their families all around us, trying to home-educate our children and raise our own food, solving everybody's issues and fixing everybody's stuff - I was just too involved in too many things to have much time left to wait on the Lord and let him work through me.

Al had a solution. His home was quiet. His wife worked days, and he had no children. Why not come there each day and "wait on the Lord"? So with Al's very generous support (he provided everything I needed, including brunch and even some financial encouragement!) I began writing this book. It went pretty slowly, as I had to pray and wait on the Holy Spirit continually, for every word, every line, every paragraph. I could only write one or two pages a day. But I was amazed and pleased at the result. I could tell God was pleased too. So was Al, who helped me with the editing and constantly encouraged my faith.

Then when it came time to actually publish this book, God said, "Not yet." He had another major work he wanted me to publish first. Now, 18 years and over 25,000 hours later, it is done. It is a massive 5 volume, 1600 page work called *The Feasts of Israel - God's Plan of the Ages*. It is published by Redemption Press, a resurrection of the old WinePress, Enumclaw, Washington. That is a whole series of miracles in itself.

In fact, as I look back on my life, my entire existence has been a series of miracles to get me to this place. Yes, God knew I couldn't do what he wanted, so he arranged all the circumstances of my life so that he could do it through me - and through Al, and through J. Preston Eby, and through Redemption Press and many others of the maturing children of God. To him belongs all the glory and praise, now and evermore.

And in the process I learned a startling truth: this *Gospel of the Kingdom* thing that I began so many years ago, this task that he wanted to do through me that was so big, so impossible, that I nearly staggered in unbelief - is far bigger even than I thought. It includes all he gave me in my latest books, too. For the true "good news" of God's kingdom is always bigger and better than any of us can ever ask or imagine.



# ***The Gospel of the Kingdom***

## ***Notes on Scripture References***

I do firmly believe that the Holy Bible is the foundation for all that the Lord is doing and saying now. God does not contradict himself, for which I am very thankful! I therefore spent many hours going through the Scriptures to verify that all that he has told me here is consistent with what he has given his saints in the past, and have included these scriptures in the back of this book.

The message of Spirit through this book is built upon but does not depend upon Scripture references. In fact references could actually detract from and interrupt the flow of the Spirit if they are viewed on the mental, logical level. That is why I placed them at the back rather than on each page. I suggest you ignore them the first few times you read through it, at least until you receive an impartation of what the Holy Spirit is really saying through this book.

The references are given for the convenience of those whose eyes have been opened by the Holy Spirit to a fresh new vision of the kingdom of God, and who now need to integrate this vision into their lives and into the foundation of the Holy Scriptures that they already have. I'm not trying to prove anything to the skeptic by taking Scriptures out of context. Instead, I hope to guide you who are hungry for the word of God through the some of the major passages dealing with the various topics in the Gospel of the Kingdom.

The references are listed in approximately the same order as the topics they address, but not strictly so. Many references cover much more than one topic! Some references are lengthy, but I believe important to understand the context.

Most of my own study has been in the New American Standard Bible, the King James II, and the Baker Interlinear Bible, Hebrew/English and Greek/English. But I've also used others. I do not believe that any Bible translation is perfect, though I do believe in the absolute inerrancy of the Scriptures in their original language.

If you do have access to the original languages, by all means use them! In many cases translators have corrupted passages to fit traditional religious doctrine or their own limited understanding. An example is the Greek AION (or the Hebrew word OLAM), which usually means a limited period of time, age, or epoch. Even in its plural or multiple forms, it still refers to "ages of time" or "to the vanishing point of time from our limited perspective." Yet many translators change it to mean "eternal" (which is beyond time) in some key passages, though leaving it correctly translated in others, and changing it to "world" in others. God's word is perfectly accurate and inspired in it's original form, but man's transcription, translation, interpretation, (or deliberate manipulation) may not be! If a verse does not seem to say what the Holy Spirit is leading you to believe, look it up in the original. Be careful, prayerful, and led by the Holy Spirit!

I pray and believe that as you meditate on these and other Scriptures as he leads, the Lord will open your eyes to a fresh new vision of his Plan of the Ages.



Praise & Worship	Rom 12:1-2	John 4:24	Phil 3:3	Gal 5:13-25	Rom 8:4-14	Job 12:9-10
	Dan 5:23	Eph 4:22-24	2 Cor 5:16-21	Psalms 145:1-13	Col 3:15-17	Psalms 149:1-9
	Acts 17:24-31	Rom 12:1-2	2 Cor 3:17-18	Col 1:27	Psalms 86:9-13	Psalms 24:3-5
	Psalms 32:11	Prov 29:6	Eph 2:5-10			
Righteousness	Phil 3:7-10	Jer 33:16	Luke 18:19	Isa 64:6,8	2 Cor 4:10-11	Jer 29:11-13
	Col 2:6-3:11	Phil 3:3-11	Jer 17:9-10	Psalms 139:23	Psalms 51:10	Rom 3:20-28
	Phil 2:12-13	1 John 1:7-2:6	Isa 26:8-10	Gal 2:20-21	1 Cor 1:27-31	Matt 11:30
	Is 61:10-11	Rom 1:16-17	2 Cor 5:21	1 Jn 2:28-3:10		
Peace	John 14:23-31	Phil 4:4-9	1 Cor 2:6-16	John 1:1-5	Gen 1:31	Luke 18:18-19
	Heb 2:14-18	1 John 3:8	John 12:31-32	1 Cor 15:20-28	1 Cor 15:54-57	2 Tim 1:10
	Rom 8:28-39	Eph 3:11 ff	Eph 1:3-14	Isa 26:1-10	Matt 25:34	James 3:18
	Matt 28:18	Acts 17:24-28	Ps 103:19-28	2 Cor 5:21	John 16:32-33	John 20:19-22
	Col 3:15-17	1 Thes 5:1-24	Eph 2:10	Psalms 119:165	Heb 3:18-4:11	Ex 3:14
	John 8:58					
Humility	John 7:17-18	Prov 15:33	Prov 18:12	Prov 22:4	Acts 20:19-21	1 John 3:19-25
	1 John 4:4	1 John 5:4-5	Gal 2:20	Isa 6:5-8	1 John 5:14-15	Rom 8:9-21
	1 John 1:9	Phil 4:11-13	Col 1:24-29	Eph 3:7-21	Acts 4:23-33	2 Pet 3:11-14
	Rev 1:6; 4:11	Jude 24 & 25				
Love	1 John 3:1	1 John 4:7-5:5	James 1:13-17	1 John 2:15	1 Cor 13	Gal 5:22-24
	Rom 5:8-21	Rom 2:4	2 Cor 7:1-3	Matt 25:31-46	Matt 10:40 ff	1 John 3:18
(2nd page)	Heb 4:12-16	Amos 5:15	Ps 139:21-22	1 John 4:18	Prov 1:7, 9:10	2 Pet 3:9
	Matt 18:14	Col 1:12-22	Matt 5:44-48	Rom 3:20-31	Acts 3:21	Isa 45:21-25
	Phil 2:9-11	1 Tim 2:1-6	1 Tim 4:9-11	John 12:32-33	John 3:14-17	1 Cor 15:22-28
	1 Cor 15:50-58	Rev 5:13	Phil 3:21	John 12:27-32	Rom 5:8-21	Eph 1:3-14
	Rom 8:12-39	Eph 2:4-10	Eph 3:8-12			
Grace	2 Pet 3:18	Matt 25:31-46	2 Tim 1:8-12	Eph 3:7-21	1 Cor 15:10	Eph 1:3-2:10
	Psalms 89:14	2 Cor 9:8	John 1:14	Rom 3:23-24	John 1:16	Rom 5:1-21
	Rom 2:4	Eph 4:6-10	James 4:4-10	Tit 2:11	2 Cor 12:7-10	Rom 9:11-23
	Rom 11:5-11	Rom 11:25,26	Isa 63:17	Zech 12:10	Rev 17:17	Heb 4:16
Mercy	2 Pet 1:3-4	Psalms 136	2 Pet 3:8-14	Tit 2:11, 3:4-7	1 Pet 2:24, 3:18	Eph 2:1-9
	Psalms 89:14	Matt 23:23	Micah 6:8	1 Cor 15:20-28	Rom 8:28-32	Eph 1:21-23
	Eph 2:7	Rom 9:8-23	Mal 1:2-5	2 Thes 2:11-12	Psalms 51:4	Ex 4:21,14:4
	Josh 11:20	Deut 2:30	Isa 63:17	Zech 12:10	Rom 11:7-36	Rev 17:17
	2 Thes 1:10-12	Eph 3:4-11	Jude 14,15	Jude 22,23	1 Cor 6:2-3	2 Thes 1:10-12
Justice	Matt 25:31-46	Matt 16:27	2 Cor 5:10	Psalms 89:14	Psalms 85:10	Rom 3:19-31
	Isa 26:8-10	1 Pet 4:17-19	Psalms 96:7-13	Psalms 98:4-9	Psalms 33:4-5	Prov 6:23
	Ps 119:97-105	Rom 1:16-20	1 Cor 11:27-32	1 Cor 3:11-15	Heb 12:1-13	Prov 2:1-12
	Prov 3:1-12	Matt 23:23 ff	Acts 17:30-31	Micah 6:8	Matt 5:5-7	Rom 9:14-23
	Heb 4:4-11	Psalms 11:7	1 Cor 4:1-5	Psalms 106:3	Psalms 15:1-5	
Judgment	Matt 23 & 24	Psalms 75:6-8	Gal 6:7-9	1 Pet 4:12-19	Ex 8:22, 10:23	1 Cor 11:27-32
	Psalms 91	Heb 12:4-11	2 Thes 1:4-12	Isa 26:8-9	Lam 3:22-23	2 Pet 3:3-14
	1 Tim 2:1-8	Isa 55:11	Isa 11:2-9	2 Pet 2:9	1 Pet 5:8-10	Job 1:8-12
	Job 2:2-6	Rom 8:18	2 Cor 4:17	1 John 4:4-19	Prov 10:24	Isa 66:2-5
Sin	Psalms 51	Matt 1:21	1 Tim 4:9-11	Heb 2:18, 4:15	1 Cor 10:12-14	James 1:2-18
	Gen 22:1 ff	1 Pet 1:6-7	2 Pet 2:9	Malachi 3:3	James 4:17	Rom 14:23
	Gal 2:16-20	Gal 3:24 ff	Rom 7:4-12	1 Sam 16:7	John 1:29	Eph 4:17-19
	Rom 11:7-11	Gen 3:1-7	1 John 3:1-10	1 John 5:18	Heb 4:16	
Sin (2nd page)	Luke 5:31-32	Luke 15:6-7	2 Cor 7:9-10	2 Tim 2:25-26	Heb 6:1	Rom 3:23-24
	Col 1:27-2:10	Gal 2:20	2 Cor 12:9-10	1 Cor 3:16-17	Heb 4:15	Heb 7:26-28
	2 Cor 5:21	James 3:2-10	Rom 10:8-10	Prov 10:20	Prov 10:30-31	Prov 16:1
	2 King 6:15-17	Rom 5 & 6	1 John 1:6-10	Col 2:11-15	Col 3:1-11	Gal 5:24
	2 Cor 5:21	2 Cor 3:18	2 Pet 1:3-11	Eph 1:12	1 Pet 2:24	

## References (cont.)

Gospel of the  
Kingdom

Health	Matt 4:23	Matt 8:16-17	1 Cor 3:16-17	James 5:15-16	1 Pet 2:24	Psalm 103:2-3
	3 John 2	Heb 12:10-13	Ex 15:26	Deut 7:12-15	Deut 28:58-62	Gen 1:29-30
	Psalm 104:14	Isa 66:16-18	Leviticus 11	Lev 17:10-14	Lev 3:16-17	Deut 12:15-28
	Gen 9:2-6	Isa 11:6-9	Isa 65:17-25	Rev 22:2-3	Jer 33:6-16	Job 5:23
	Ezek 34:23-31 Prov 25:16	Hos 2:18-19	1 Cor 6:12-13	1 Cor 10:23-31	1 Tim 4:3-8	Prov 24:13
(2nd page)	Gal 5:22-23 Isa 58:13-14	2 Pet 1:6 ff Mark 2:27-3:5	Prov 3:24 Isa 56:1-2	Eccl 5:12 Prov 3:5-6	Heb 4:1-11 Rom 10:9-13	Isa 58:3-9 Prov 16:24
Physical Body	1 Pet 5:7	Heb 4:15	Eph 1:22-23	Eph 4:11-16	Eph 5:22-33	Col 1:13-3:11
	1 Cor 3:16-23	1 Cor 12:1-31	Gal 3:23-4:19	Heb 10:5 ff	Psalm 91	2 Cor 6:14-7:1
	Psalm 27:4-5	Psalm 29:9	John 15:1-8	Deut 7:9-15	1 Cor 6:13-20	John 17
	Rev 19:5-10 Rev 7:14-17	Rev 21:1-11	Rev 22:17	Matt 22:1-14	Matt 25:1-13	Joel 3:20
	(2nd page)	1 Cor 15:20-58 Gal 2:20	Matt 5:18 James 1:18	Matt 24:35 1 Cor 2:2-16	Rom 12:1-8 Phil 2:5-13	Rom 8:12-30 Heb 2:9-12
Law	Psalm 119	Deut 7:9-15	Deut 8:1-14	Exodus 20	Deut 5 & 6	Matt 22:36-40
	Rom 13:1-7	Lev 11	Gal 3:19-4:11	Job 38:4-11 ff	2 Thes 2:7 ff	1 Pet 1:23, 25
	Matt 5:17-48	Heb 8:10-12	1 John 4:8	John 3:16-17	Rom 13:8-10	Gal 5:13-18
	Rom 5 - 8	1 John 4:7-12	Rom 12:8-10			
	(2nd page)	Gal 5:13-18 Matt 25:1-36	Rom 13:14 Rom 1:18-23	2 Thes 2:4 Psalm 19:1-11	1 Cor 8:1-6	Col 3:2
(3rd page)	Psalm 9:10	Ps 91:14-16	Ex 31:13-17	John 7:16-24	Mark 2:27-3:6	Eccl 1 & 2
	Ezek 22:26	Heb 3:18-4:11	Isa 58:13-14	Ezek 20:12-24	Matt 25:34	Matt 6:33-34
	Luke 12:28-32	Rev 20:4-6	Gen 2:1-3	Eph 1:3-12	Rev 5:9-10	1 Cor 11:11-12
	Matt 6:9	Ps 103:13-14	Prov 1:8	Prov 6:20-23	Eph 6:1-4	Psalm 89:1-18
	John 1:1-5	Rom 8:19-23	Gen 1:24-31	Joel 2:25		
(4th page)	Jer 3:1-15	Eph 5:22-32	1 Cor 6:13-20	John 17:10-26	Rev 19:6-9	1 Chr 29:14-16
	Psalm 50:7-14	Luke 12:35-44	Psalm 51:4	Rom 1:18,3:4	1 John 2:21-27	1 John 3:18-19
	1 Tim 1:10	Rev 21:8, 27	Rev 22:15	Eph 4:15	John 14:6	John 16:13
	1 Tim 2:1-6	Matt 6:19-34	1 Pet 4:6-13	Psalm 119:1-35	Ps 119:97-120	Psalm 119:165
	Isa 58:13-14	Deut 32:6-14				
Relationship	James 4:6-10	John 15:15	Heb 12:5-7	Heb 2:11-12	John 17:11	John 17:21-23
	Isa 9:6	Matt 6:9	Ps 91:14-16	Psalm 9:10	Col 1:16-17	John 1:1-3,14
	1 Cor 8:4-6	1 Tim 6:14-16	Gen 1, 2:7	Job 37:10	1 Cor 15:28	Matt 5:3-8
	Prov 1:7, 9:10	Prov 2:1-11	Matt 1:23	John 3:13-18	Phil 2:5-11	Eph 2:13-19
	Matt 1:21	Rom 6:1-11	1 John 1:3-7	Gal 5:22-25	Col 3:12-17	Heb 2:11
	John 1:41	Luke 2:11	Rev 1:8	Acts 2:36	Matt 5:17	Matt 3:15
	Matt 20:26-28	Neh 8:10	Ex 15:26	1 Pet 2:24	John 14:16-28	John 16:7-13
	Ex 3:14-15	Gen 22:14	Rom 8:9-23	1 Tim 6:16	1 John 4:7-11	1 John 5:12
	John 14:6	Eph 1:18-23				
Joy	John 15:11 ff	John 17:13	Phil 4:11-13	Matt 6:25-34	Psalm 36:7-9	Tit 1:15
	Psalm 16:11	Rom 2:4	John 16:20-24	Psalm 21:3-6	Psalm 43:3-4	James 4:1-4
	Heb 11:25-26	James 5:1-5	Phil 2:1-11	Rom 8:18-25		
Faith	James 1:2-8	James 2:14-26	Eph 2:8-10	Heb 11:1 ff	Matt 17:20	Matt 8:8-13
	Luke 17:5-6	Luke 18:8	Rom 1:17; 3:3-4, 27-31; 4:5-25; 10:8-17; 12:3			Heb 12:11
Faith (2nd page)	John 7:17	Matt 16:24-27	1 Cor 13:2 ff	Isa 48:1; 64:6	Rom 14:1-5, 22-23; 16:25-27	
	2 Cor 10:2-7	1 John 5:13-15	Matt 21:21-22	1 Cor 1:18-2:5	Gal 3:23-26; 5:6, 16-18, 24-25	
Suffering	Matt 5:3-5	Matt 11:28-30	Rom 3:9-31	Rom 5:12-21	1 Cor 15:20-28	Rom 6:12-20
	Eph 2:1-5	Rom 2:4	Phil 2:12-13	2 Cor 5:21	Heb 4:15	Heb 2:18
	2 Cor 7:2-3	Col 3:10-11	Rom 8:16-25	Rom 6:16,21,23	Gal 6:7-8	Hos 8:7
	2 Cor 4:7-18	1 Pet 2:20-25	Rom 5:6-8	Heb 5:8-9	1 Pet 4:1-2	1 Pet 4:12-19
	1 Pet 5:9-10	Mal 2:15	2 Cor 3:18	2 Pet 1:3-11	John 17:21-23	Phil 3:7-15
	Eph 3:13-21	Eph 4:13				



Reaching the Lost	Matt 11:28-30 Psalm 89:11-16 Rom 10:11-17 Rev 14:9-11 1 John 4:17 ff Eph 4:15	1 Pet 5:7 Rev 6:12-16 Eph 2:1-7 1 John 4:16-18 Isa 11:2-9 John 12:31-32	1 John 4:7-12 1 Cor 15:20-28 Col 1:25-29 Gal 6:7-9 Heb 2:15 1 Cor 15:20-28	Deut 6:4 Rev 5:13 John 15:7-17 Heb 5:8-9 Rom 6:23 1 Tim 4:7-11	Matt 12:29 Isa 45:21-24 Rev 20:10-15 Isa 26:8-9 Rom 8:15 ff	Psalms 33:1-5 John 14:6 Rev 21:8 Isa 66:2-5 1 Tim 2:1-8
Discipline, Testing	Heb 11:32-38 Rev 22:12-17 Heb 11:39-40 Prov 13:24 Prov 2:1-12 Prov 4:18	Col 1:24 1 Pet 4:1-2 2 Cor 5:14-6:1 1 Pet 1:6-7 Prov 4:1-9 Mal 4:2-3	Rom 8:22 ff 1 Pet 4:12-19 Joel 2:3 ff James 1:2-5,12 2 Tim 2:9-13	Isa 66:7-24 Heb 12:1-11 Deut 4:24 Heb 2:10 1 Pet 5:10	Eph 1:20-23 Phil 4:11-13 Heb 12:26-29 Heb 5:8-9 Isa 26:7-10	Rev 21:27 Phil 3:12 ff Prov 3:11-12 Prov 1:1-10 Deut 9:3
Baptism of Fire	Matt 13 Luke 9:62 Luke 3:16-17	Luke 12:32 Gal 2:16-21 James 1:2-4,12	Heb 12:1-11 Rom 3:19-31; 5:3 ff, 8-21; 6; 8:1-4, 16-18 Psalm 149:5-9 Joel 2:1-11	Heb 12:25-29 Heb 6:4-6 1-4, 16-18 Prov 4:18	Luke 17:21 ff Isa 26:7-10 Mk 9:43-49	
Sabbath Rest	Ezek 20:12-24 Gen 1:26-29 John 4:32-34	Ex 20:8-11 Gen 1:25 ff John 5:16-30	Mark 2:27-3:6 Heb 3:18-4:11	Gen 3:17-19 John 7:16-24	Psalms 127:2 Isa 58:13-14	Gen 2:1-3,8-9 John 14:10-12
(2nd page)	Eccl 1 & 2 Isa 66:22-23 1 Cor 15:55-58	Rom 8:18-23 2 Pet 1:2-11 2 Cor 5:14-6:3	Acts 2:22-47 Eph 1:4-12	Rom 14:5 2 Cor 12:7-10	Gal 4:6-11 Eph 1:22-23	Ex 31:13-17 Matt 11:28-30
Sabbath Rest II	Rev 12:12 Psalm 103:7 Jer 6:16 John 15:12 ff Matt 26:29 ff	1 Pet 5:8 John 17:11 1 Chr 29:10-14 1 John 3:14-24	2 Pet 1:3-11 John 17:20-26 Matt 28:18 1 John 4:7-21	James 4:7-8 Rom 12:5-16 Luke 9:1-2 2 Cor 5:14-6:3	John 17:17 1 Cor 2:11-16 Phil 4:13 Matt 4:23,9:35	John 8:44 Heb 3:18-4:11 Matt 11:28-30 Matt 25:34-40
(2nd page)	Rev 1:6 1 Pet 4:1-2 Heb 5:8-9 John 14:6 Luke 9:62	Rev 5:9-10 1 Pet 4:12-19 Isa 58:13-14 John 17 Matt 25:34 ff	Rev 20:2-7 James 1:2-5,12 Eph 3:14-21 1 John 4:17 2 Pet 1:3-11	1 Pet 2:5-10 Rev 3:21 Heb 2:9-15 1 John 2:28-3:1 Ex 19:5-6	Ex 19:5-6 2 Tim 2:9-13 John 8:51,10:1 John 14:10-12 Dan 7:18,22,27	Isa 61:6 ff Rom 8:17 ff John 11:25-26 Rom 10:10

## Volume 2

Prayer	John 15:4-13 John 5:21-26 Prov 16:3 Eph 6:18 Rom 1:18-32	Psalm 91:1-16 John 14:6 Luke 11:1-4 Luke 18:1-8 2 Pet 1:3-4	1 John 4:7-12 1 John 5:20 Matt 6:5-13 Matt 5:45	John 13:34-35 Matt 5:25-34 Matt 26:41 Acts 1:14 Heb 12:6 ff	John 1:4 Psalm 27:3-6 Luke 21:36 Eph 2:1-5 Rom 8:1-8	John 11:21-26 Prov 3:5-6 1 Thes 5:17-18 Col 2:13 Matt 7:21-23
(2nd page)	Rom 8:9-17 1 John 3:6-10 Isa 40:27-31 Prov 1-4 Eph 5:20	2 Pet 1:16 1 John 3:22-24 Lam 3:22-27 Gal 3:1-11 Col 3:15-17	Phil 4:6 1 John 5:14-15 James 5:13-18 Rom 14:23 Matt 18:18-20 ff	Matt 6:25-34 John 14:12-17 Rom 8:25 ff Matt 17:20 1 John 1:1-4	Ps 23:6; 27:4-6; 37:4-5; 84 Acts 1:4 ff Matt 7:7-8 Matt 21:21-22 John 17:2-3 ff	Ps 25, 37:7-9 Psalm 103:7 Phil 4:6
Peace II	Phil 4:7 John 14:26-27 Psalm 62:8 Heb 12:9-14 Isa 58:13-14 Gal 3:27-28	1 Cor 2:14-16 John 16:33 Psalm 125:1 Rom 8:6 ff Eph 4:3 ff 1 Cor 15:20-28	Matt 10:34-39 Heb 2:8 Job 13:15 Rom 14:17-19 Col 1:12-22 Mat 5:9	Luke 12:49-53 Col 2:9-15 Psalm 91 1 John 4:7-5:5 Col 3:1-15	1 Thes 5:3 Gal 5:22-25 1 Thes 5:15-24 Rom 15:13 John 8:44	Eph 2:13-22 Psalm 37:3-5 James 3:18 Heb 4:1-11 2 Cor 5:17-6:3

## References (cont.)

Gospel of the  
Kingdom

Judgment II	2 Thes 1:4-12 1 Pet 1:6-7 2 Pet 3:11-14 Isa 11:1-9 1 John 5:3-5	Heb 12:4-11 Heb 12:10 ff Isa 65:17-25 Isa 12:1-6 1 Cor 15:57 ff	1 Pet 4:1-2 Heb 12:25-29 Isa 66:22-24 2 Pet 1:3-11 Rom 8:37 ff	1 Pet 4:12-19 Psalm 149:5-9 Rev 20:4 ff Micah 4:1-8 Heb 2:14-15	James 1:2-5,12 Joel 2:1-11 Isa 26:8-10 Isa 54:11-17 1 Chron 29:11	Matt 25:34 ff Isa 54:17 Isa 60-62 1 Cor 6:2
Grace II	Rom 3:24; 4:3-16; 5:2, 17-21; 6:1, 14-15; 11:5-6; 12:6 1 Cor 15:10 Heb 12:27-29 Rom 6:1-2 ff Rom 10:9	4:3-16; 5:2, 17-21; 6:1, 14-15; 11:5-6; 12:6 Heb 2:9 Mk 7:19 Isa 61:1-2 Rom 11:36	1 Pet 4:10 Rom 14:14-20 Isa 45:21-25; 49:6; 57:16-19 Col 1:16-20	Isa 45:7; 54:16 1 Cor 6:12 1 Cor 15:22-28 Rom 6:15; 7:7-11, 24-25	2 Cor 9:8; 12:9 Jer 32:42 1 Cor 10:23 1 Cor 15:22-28 Luke 2:40	Eph 2:5-8 Lam 3:31-38 Rom 5:17-21 Phil 2:9-11
Fellowship	Isa 58:8-11 1 Cor 15:20-28 Col 1:13-2:15 Eph 1:17-23	Rom 11:33-36 Psalm 103:7 Psalm 119:1-16 Matt 5:8	Isa 2:2-4 Hab'k 2:2-4 Prov 23:26 Col 3:1-11	Rom 12:1-2 Eph 2:14-22 Prov 8:32-35 Matt 12:17-21	Prov 29:18 1 Cor 12:12-27 Psalm 128:1-4 Eph 1:3-12	Eph 3:11 ff Gal 3:28 2 Cor 5:14-6:3
Joy II	Heb 12:2, 11 Psalms 30:5 ff; 43:4-5; 51:10-13; 67:2-4, 7 Isa 12:3-4; 35:2-4, 10; 60:15; 61:3, 6-7 1 Thes 2:19-20	James 1:2-5 3 John 4	1 Pet 1:8; 4:13 Jude 24	Matt 5:12 Prov 15:23-24 John 3:29; 15:11; 16:20-24; 17:13 Job 38:7	Col 1:24 Eccl 2:26 16:20-24; 17:13 Jer 15:15	1 Sam 16:7 Rom 14:17 Gal 5:22 Ezek 36:22-28
Time, Temporal	Eccl 3:1,11 Col 1:15-22 Rev 14:15-20 Mal 3:2-5,4:2-3 Rev 20:1-7 Eph 4:13 ff	John 1:1-3 Ezek 28:12-19 2 Thes 1:4-12 Deut 33:26-28 Dan 12:3-4,10	Gen 1:1 Isa 14:12-21 Rom 8:1-23 2 Cor 10:3-6 1 Cor 15:20-28	Heb 1:2, 11:3 Joel 3:13 ff 2 Cor 4:7-11 Psalm 149:5-9 Eph 1:3-13	Job 38 2 Pet 2:4,9 Heb 2:14-18 Rom 16:20 Col 1:15-22	Isa 40:26 Jude 6 Joel 2:1-11,28 2 Cor 5:14-6:3 1 Chron 16:15
Eternity	Eccl 3:11 Isa 44:6, 57:15 Rom 12:2 Col 2:2-3 Col 1:15-22	1 Cor 2:11-16 Isa 40:28 Eph 4:23-24 Isa 45:5-7 1 Cor 8:6	Psalm 90:2-4 Isa 48:12-13 2 Cor 5:17-21 Matt 5:18 Eph 1:3-11	Gen 21:33 Rev 1:8 Rom 11:33-36 Matt 24:35 Rev 20:14	John 8:58 James 1:17 1 John 2:27-3:1 2 Pet 3:10 Eph 1:22-23	Ex 3:14 Mal 3:6 (Psalm 139 2 Pet 1:3-11
Life and Death	John 1:4 Luke 2:52 1 Tim 5:6 Heb 2:14-15 Mark 9:43-48 Col 1:25-29	John 11:25-26 2 Pet 1:3-11 Eph 1:20-23 Rom 6 Isa 45:22-25 Eph 2:1-10	John 14:6 John 10:10 Hos 13:14 Rev 14:9-11 Rom 14:7-12 Eph 3:8-11	Gen 2:7 Luke 15:24-32 1 Cor 15:54-57 Rev 20:14-15 Phil 2:9-11 Col 1:20 ff	Matt 11:29 Col 2:13 2 Cor 5:1-8 Isa 66:24 Rev 5:13 Col 3:11	Heb 5:8-9 Eph 2:1-6 1 Cor 15:26 Jer 17:27 Matt 18:18-20 1 Cor 15:20-28
Sleep, Physical Death	Prov 3:24 Psalm 77:6 Job 26:5-6 Luke 12:47-48	Psalm 127:1-2 1 John 4:18 Prov 24:12 Rev 20:12-13	Ps 4:4, 17:15 Luke 8:55 ff Eph 4:10 Rev 22:12	Matt 9:24 ff Luke 23:43 ff Heb 4:14 1 Cor 13:12	1 Thes 4:13-18 Luke 16:19-31 2 Cor 12:2 Deut 10:14	John 11:11-44 Job 21:13
Heaven & Hell	Eph 2:6 Psalm 23 Jude 24 & 25 Isa 57:15 1 Cor 15:54-57 Isa 61:11	Eph 1:3-4 Ps 51:10-12 Eph 3:17-21 Job 36:26 Isa 25:8 2 Cor 5:21 ff	John 14:2-3 Psalm 16:11 Eph 4:13 Rev 14:9-12 1 Pet 2:24 Rev 5:13	Psalm 27 Psalms 8 & 19 Rom 8:35-39 Rev 19:3-20 2 Pet 3:13	Ps 90:1, 91:1 2 Cor 12:2 Job 11:7-9 Rev 20:10-15 Isa 60:17, 21 ff	1 Kings 8:30 Psalm 103:19 1 Chr 29:10-13 1 Cor 15:20-28 Isa 65:24
Angels & Demons	1 Kings 8:30 Isa 47:12-15 2 Cor 12:2 Luke 12:47-48	1 Cor 13:12 Micah 5:12 Ps 103:19-20 Matt 18:10	Isa 57:15 Malachi 3:5 Eph 4:10 Acts 12:15	Psalm 27:4 Psalm 23:4 Heb 4:14 Dan 7:10	Deut 18:9-13 Rev 21:22-25 Deut 10:14 Luke 2:13-14	Ex 22:18 Rev 22:5 Job 26:5-6 Heb 1:6
(2nd page)	Heb 1:14 ff James 4:7 Rom 13:13 Rev 12:10-12	Matt 14:23 1 Pet 5:8-10 Eph 5:3-5 1 Cor 15:57 ff	James 1:5-8 1 John 4:18 1 Tim 1:8-10 1 Chr 29:10-13	James 1:12-15 Gal 5:19-21 Rev 21:8,27 Psalm 98:1-3	1 Cor 10:13 1 Cor 6:9-10 Rev 22:15 1 John 5:4-5	2 Pet 2:9 1 Cor 5:11 Eph 4:17-19 Eph 6:10-18

Spiritual Warfare	1 Sam 16:14-23 Luke 9:1-2 Ps 89:46-48 Heb 4:12 1 John 4:2-3	2 Cor 10:3-6 1 Cor 15:54-57 Eph 4:4,17-24 1 Thes 5:23 Rom 8:5-14	Matt 8:16 Col 2:13-15 Isa 44:24-26 John 15:4-8 Rom 13:14	Matt 8:28 ff Heb 2:8-18 Isa 45:6-9 John 8:42-44 Gen 2:17	Mark 1:32-34 Matt 11:28-30 Isa 46:8-11 1 John 3:5-10 James 4:4	Mark 6:7 Job 7:1-10 1 Cor 15:45-49 1 John 2:18-27 1 John 2:15
(2nd page)	Rom 6:4-11 Psalm 91:1 Gal 5:16-18	Rom 1:21-23 Psalm 31:20 Gal 4:6-7	Eph 4:17-24 Eph 6:10-18 1 John 5:3-5	Rom 8:26-30 Eph 2:8-10 Mark 16:17-18	Heb 13:5 Heb 12:2 1 Pet 4:11	Psalm 23 Phil 2:12-13 Acts 13:1-4
Discerning the Body	Col 2:19 ff Rom 11:36 1 Cor 12:27 ff	1 Cor 3:16-17; Matt 10:29 Eph 4:4-6	10:31; 11:23-34 Matt 6:25-30 1 John 3:5-10	John 15:1-5 1 Cor 8:6 Acts 17:28 ff	John 14:6, 10 ff Heb 2:10; 4:12 Rom 12:5 ff; 13:14 - 15:7	Col 1:15-20 1 Cor 12:12-13 Rom 12:5 ff; 13:14 - 15:7
(2nd page)	1 Cor 12:20-27 Heb 12:5-11 Rom 5:8-21	Matt 7:1 ff Titus 2:11 Acts 15:11	Luke 6:37 Titus 3:3-7 Rom 3:23-24	Luke 6:41 ff 2 Tim 1:9-10 Eph 2:8-10	1 Cor 12:4-11 2 Cor 9:8-15 Isa 43:8-13	Rom 8:1-4 Eph 4:10-16 Eph 4:4-13
Futility	Rom 8:18-23 John 16:33 1 Cor 15:42-58	Job 7:1-10 John 17:20-23 Col 3:4 ff	Ps 78:32-35 Heb 4:3, 4, 10 Gal 2:20	Ps 89:46-48 2 Cor 5:18-21 John 11:25-26	Eph 4:17-24 2 Cor 3:2 - 4:11 John 10:3, 27	John 14:27 1 Cor 15:23 ff 1 Pet 4:11-13
Creation	Heb 4:1-11 Acts 14:17	Genesis 1 & 2 Acts 17:24-28	1 John 4:8, 16 Rom 5:12-21	Eph 1:10 ff Rom 1:18-25	Mark 10:6 ff 1 Cor 15:54-58	Psalm 19:1-6 Matt 10:29
(2nd page)	Rom 8:17-39 Rev 12:10-11	Heb 12:2 ff 1 John 2:13-14	Gen 6:5 - 9:17 Rom 16:19-20	Isa 65:17-25 1 John 5:4-5	Isa 11:6-9 2 Cor 10:6 ff	Rev 3:21 ff Rom 5:1-11
Free Will	Rom 5:8-21 John 8:31-36 Eph 2:1-3 Isa 45:5-13 Rom 8:28-30	Acts 15:11 1 Pet 2:16 ff Rom 2:14-15 Isa 46:8-11 Rom 9:13-23	Rom 3:23-24 2 Tim 2:13 Gal 2:20 Isa 45:20-25 Phil 1:6	Eph 2:8-10 Heb 6:18 Heb 11:6 Phil 2:9-13 Gal 1:15-16	Gal 5:1, 13 ff Titus 1:2 Isa 43:8-13 Rom 14:7-12 Rom 11:5-32	2 Cor 3:17 ff Num 23:19 Isa 44:24-28 Eph 1:4-11
(2nd page)	Ezek 18:4 ff Rom 7:17-25 Heb 2:9-11 Gal 2:4	Ezek 18:20-23 Ezek 2:6-10 Heb 10:1-31 James 1:25	Ezek 18:32 Matt 15:18-19 Rom 7:4-6 John 15:5 ff	Rom 6:16-23 Rom 2:1-16 Rom 7:20, 23 Matt 6:33	John 8:34 ff Mal 3:8-11 Rom 8:2 ff Col 1:16-28	2 Pet 2:19-22 Psalm 13:5 Gal 5:18 ff 2 Cor 3:17
Freedom	Eph 1:3-12 Col 2:13-15 Luke 9-32 Isa 55:9-11	Rom 8:28-30 Luke 15:24-32 John 2:11 Heb 4:12-13	Acts 13:48 Luke 5:31-32 John 1:4 2 Tim 3:15-17	Isa 45:4-9 Matt 5:45 ff John 8:12 Josh 1:8	Deut 7:6-9 John 1:14 John 8:32-36 Ps 119:97-105	Eph 2:1-6 1 John 1:1-2 Isa 43:8-13 1 Cor 1:17-30
Bondage	Isa 14:1-9 2 Pet 2:18-22 ff Psalm 36:7-9 Eccl 2:10-11	Rom 8:15, 21 1 Tim 5:6 Luke 8:14 Jer 29:11-14	Gal 4:1-11 James 4:1-4 2 Tim 3:1-7 Jude 24	Gal 4:21-31 James 5:1-6 Titus 3:1-7 Isa 9:2-7	Heb 2:14-15 Job 36:5-13 Heb 11:24-26 Psalm 30:5	John 8:31-36 Psalm 16:11 Matt 7:7 ff Isa 35:1-10
Doctrine	Isa 9:6 Eph 4:14 2 Tim 3:16 Rom 8:1, 14	Matt 28:18-20 Heb 13:9 1 Tim 6:3-5 1 Cor 13:7 ff	2 Cor 13:14 2 Tim 4:1-5 Rom 3:23 Ex 15-11	John 1:14, 17 Titus 1:9; 2:1 Heb 6:1-2 Deut 7:21	John 14:6 Matt 15:8-9 Eph 6:1-3 Deut 10:17	1 Tim 1:3-10 Col 2:18-23 John 10:3, 27 Psalm 104
(2nd page)	Deut 6:4 John 12:28 ff Matt 13:11 Gen 1:27 Job 37:5 Matt 11:28-30	Deut 4:35, 39 John 15:26 Mark 4:11 Rom 16:17-18 Heb 8:10-11 Eph 4:13 ff	Isa 44:6-8 John 16:7-15 1 Cor 2:16; 4:1; 8:5-6; 11:18-19; 15:22 ff Rom 5:12-21 Col 2:18 ff Rom 8:27	Isa 45:21-24 Rev 1:4; 3:1; 4:5; 5:6 Rev 19:7-9 Phil 2:3-5 Prov 3:5-8	Mark 1:10-11 Isa 11:2 Eph 5:25-32 Rom 11:33-36 John 14:26 Psalm 37:3-5	Mark 9:7 Isa 11:2 Eph 5:25-32 Rom 11:33-36 John 16:13-15 Isa 26:9
Government	John 15:4-5 Matt 24:14 2 Cor 10:4-6 Luke 60-62 Heb 5:12-6:1 ff Matt 6:10	1 John 2:24-27 Rom 5:12-15 Eph 6:12 ff Matt 12:28 Isa 9:6 Matt 28:18-20	Psalm 16:11 1 John 2:15-17 Matt 6:33 ff Mark 1:14-15 Matt 28:18 John 14:12-14	John 9:5 Rom 12:2 Mark 16:15-18 Luke 17:20-21 1 Cor 15:24-25 John 20:21-23	John 17:14-16 James 1:27 Heb 2:2-4 Eph 4:13-15 Rev 21 & 22 John 17:18	1 Cor 5:10 ff 1 John 2:15-17 Luke 9:2-11 1 Cor 14:20 Zech 14:9 ff Acts 17:6

## References (cont.)

## Gospel of the Kingdom

Government (2nd page)	Isa 32:1-8 Acts 4:24-29 Rev 11:15-18 Prov 8:12-16 2 Pet 2:10	Isa 9:6-7 Prov 16:10-15 Rev 12:10 Isa 24 Ex 22:28	Isa 11:4 Prov 20:8 Rev 20:4-6 Isa 5:20-24 1 Cor 1:20 ff	Psalms 72:1-4 Prov 24:21 Rev 22:5 Luke 12:30 Titus 3:1 ff	Psalms 2:2-4 Prov 25:5 Rev 3:21 John 1:10 Rom 13:1-7	Psalms 46:6 Prov 31:3-4 Rev 5:10 Jud 8 1 Pet 2:13-17
Kingdom Basics	Isa 43-46 Matt 28:18-20 Rom 12:2, 21	Gen 1:26-28 Matt 5:13-16 1 Pet 1:14 ff	Psalms 8:6 ff Eph 4:14-25 Titus 2:6 – 3:9	Psalms 72 John 14:19-20 Matt 22:37-40	Daniel 7:27 Rev 20:4-6 Matt 7:12	Col 1:9-28 Rev 22:17 2 Pet 2:10
(2nd page left)	2 Thes 3:10 ff Prov 3:1-8 Isa 24:2 ff Psalms 99:4	1 Tim 5:13 Prov 4 Deut 23:20 ff Prov 1:3 ff	Rom 13:8 Prov 10:22 Deut 15:4-6 Isa 11:3-5	Prov 6:20-23 Prov 8:20-21 Deut 28:12 ff Isa 59:2-15	Prov 1:7-9 Prov 24:3-4 Deut 28:44 ff Micah 3:2, 9 ff	Prov 2:1-11 Prov 22:7 Psalms 98:9
(2nd page right)	Phil 4:11-19 1 Tim 6:1-11 Hosea 4:6; 6:1 Mark 8:35 Matt 12:15	2 Cor 9:8 1 Cor 12:7, 11 1 Tim 4:4 Rom 14 Luke 9:2	James 4:1-4 Rom 12:6 ff 1 Cor 8:8 2 Chron 7:14 Luke 10:8-9	Matt 6:25-34 1 Pet 4:10 Col 2:20-23 Deut 32:39 James 5:14-16	Eph 6:5-7 1 Cor 6:12-20 Mark 16:17-18 Jer 30:17 1 Pet 2:24	Col 3:22-24 Ex 15:26 1 Cor 10:20 Matt 10:8 Psalms 103:3

## Volume 3

Man	Gen 1:26-28 Gen 5:1; 9:6 2 Pet 1:3-4 Rev 19:8, 14 ff 2 Cor 13:3-5, 1	Gen 2:7 Rom 8:29-30 Eph 3:16-21 Psalms 149: 6 ff Isa 42:8; 48:11	2 Cor 5:18-20 John 17:20-23 1 John 4:17 Rev 2:26-27 Rom 8:17-18	Ezek 36:26-28 Gal 2:20 1 Pet 2:5-9 Jude 14-15 2 Thes 1:10	Ezek 37:14 Col 2:9-13 1 Cor 3:9-17 Isa 28:16 ff 1 Pet 5:1	1 Cor 11:7 2 Cor 3:18 Eph 2:19-22 2 Cor 12:7-9 2 Pet 1:3
Faith II	Eccl 3:11 Isa 44:9-20 Isa 28:15 ff Matt 12:31-32 Rom 6 & 7 2 Cor 7:1 Rev 12:11	Rom 2:14-16 Isa 45:20 Amos 9:2 Heb 10:26 ff Luke 8:13 2 Pet 3:9-14 Phil 3:3-15	Rom 1:21 ff Isa 46:6-7 Matt 16:18 James 1:5-8 1 Cor 10:13 1 Pet 1:15-16 Jer 29:11-14	Eph 2:1-10 Acts 17:22-31 Rev 1:18 Matt 6:24 James 1:12-13 Matt 5:44 1 John 5:4	Eccl 2:17 ff Psalms 9:17 Rev 20:10-15 Matt 16:23-27 2 Pet 2:9 Eph 2:8-10 Rom 9:30-33	Psalms 16-4 Psalms 139:8 ff Rev 2:11; 20:6 Eph 4:5 1 John 3:3 Rev 2:11, 26 ff Rom 12:3, 6
(2nd page)	Heb 11; 12:2 ff Rom 3:3-4 John 10:26-28	Matt 6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8 1 John 5:1-15 John 12:39-40	1 Cor 15:23 1 John 3:23	Luke 17:5-6 John 5:38-40 1 John 5:13	2 Tim 2:10-13 John 6:36 ff James 2:19-20	2 Cor 4:3-4 John 6:64-65 Rom 9:8-33
Sovereignty	Prov 8:15 ff Psalms 33:10-11 Luke 12:4-5 Ex 2:23-25	Daniel 5:18-21 Prov 19:21 John 12:42-43 Acts 9:31	Daniel 7:13-27 Acts 5:38-39 2 Cor 5:11, 7:1 Rom 8:28 ff	Isa 14:24; 44:24 – 45:13; 46:9-11; 54:17 Prov 29:25 Judg 2:11-23; 3:12; 4:2; 6:1; 9:23; 10:7; etc Rom 13:4 ff	Gen 12:11-20 Gen 20:2, 11 ff	
(2nd page)	Isa 45:7; 31:2 Isa 63:1-6 John 8:44 Ezek 7:27; 25:7	Amos 3:6 2 Cor 4:3-4 John 6:64, 70 Isa 45:23 ff	Lam 3:38 Mark 4:15 John 13:2, 27 Rom 14:8-12	Jer 32:37-42 Luke 22:31-32 John 17:12 Phil 2:10 ff	Isa 57:17-19 Rom 16:20 Matt 26:24 Eph 1:10 ff	Isa 59:16 ff 2 Cor 2:11 Matt 12:31-37
Building the Kingdom	Matt 13:31 ff Isa 28:16 ff 2 Cor 5:16-17 1 John 3:2	Psalms 118:22 ff Heb 12:5-11 Gal 2:20 1 Cor 15:51 ff	Zech 4:6-10 Matt 11:28 ff John 14:9 Col 1:24-28	1 Cor 3:9-17 Rom 8:21 ff Acts 4:13 Rev 21:2, 10 ff	1 Cor 6:17-20 Eph 2:8 Col 3:1-17 Isa 60:14	1 Pet 2:2-8 Heb 2:8-11 Heb 9:28 Jer 31:31-37
(2nd page)	Matt 24:22 Eph 2:7 ff	Rom 9:28 2 Cor 5:7	Rev 3:11 John 15:26-27	Rev 22:7, 12, 20 Luke 24:48-49	John 14:18-20	Eph 5:32 ff

Open Hearts	Acts 13:22 Rom 2:5 ff, 29 2 Tim 2:22 Heb 10:22-23 Rom 11:20-32 Jer 31:34	Ezek 3:7-9 2 Cor 3:2-9 Jer 38:41 1 Pet 3:4 Rom 4:20 Ezek 11:19	Mark 8:17 Matt 5:8 Prov 3:5-6 Heb 3:13, 19 Rom 3:3-4 Ezek 36:26-28	Mark 10:5 Psalm 24:4 Jer 29:11-14 James 1:6 Mark 9:24 Acts 7:51	Ezek 11:17-21 Psalm 51:10 Acts 2:46 ff Jer 9:23-24 Micah 7:18-19 1 John 4:2-4	Zech 7:12 Acts 15:8-9 Rom 10:9-10 1 Cor 13:7-8 Isa 43:25
Mission	1 Cor 11:29-30 Col 1:9-29 Matt 6:33 ff Acts 13:22 Heb 5:6-9 Col 1:19-22, 27-28; 2:9-10	1 Cor 5:9 – 6:3 2 Cor 3:18 Gen 5:22, 24 Gen 15:6 ff Heb 11:14-19; 11:39 – 12:2	1 Cor 6:17-20 Rom 12:2 ff Heb 11:5 Rom 4:3 11:39 – 12:2 Matt 5:48	Ezek 22:26 Matt 5:14-16 John 11:25-26 James 2:23 Eph 4:13 ff John 1:16	Phil 1:9-11, 27 Matt 5:48 John 6:47-51 Heb 7:1-3, 11 Eph 1:23 ff	Phil 4:8 ff Rom 5:17 – 6:2 John 8:51 Psalm 110:4 Eph 3:19 ff
Pure Hearts	Psalm 24:4 ff James 4:4 ff 2 Tim 2:22 ff 2 Cor 6:11 ff Col 1:16-22	Matt 5:8 Rom 6:12-14 Titus 2:11-14 2 Cor 7:3 1 John 3:23	1 Tim 1:5 Rom 13:14 1 Pet 1:13-17 1 Cor 13 1 John 4:7-21	1 Pet 1:22 Gal 5:24 ff Song of Sol 1:2; 4:10; 8:6-7 1 John 4:17-18 1 Pet 4:8	James 4:8 ff Eph 2:1-10 Isa 61:10; 62:5 Matt 16:16-18 Matt 22:37 ff	James 1:5-8 1 Tim 6:5-11 Isa 61:10; 62:5 Rom 8:35-39
Kingdom Relationships	Eph 4:3-6 Psalm 51:10-17 Matt 7:1-5 John 1:14, 18; 3:16, 18 Gal 3:26 ff Rev 12:1-5	Psalm 119:165 Isa 66:2 ff John 9:39 ff 1 John 4:9 Gal 4:4-7 Rom 12:4-5	Psalm 37:1-11 Isa 57:15 Acts 1:7; 17:26 1 John 4:9 Rom 9:26 1 Cor 6:15-20	Zeph 2:3 Eph 4:11-32 Matt 24:36 1 John 3:1-2 Hos 1:10 1 Cor 12:12-27	Matt 5:5 Heb 12:11-15 Eccl 3:1 ff, 11 Phil 2:15 ff Heb 12:6-7 Eph 4:4 ff	1 Pet 3:4 Phil 2:1-15 Phil 4:6-8 Rom 8:14-23 Gal 4:19 Col 3:4, 15 ff
(2nd page)	Psalms 8:5-6; 82:6; 89:26-29 Psalms 2:8; 22:27-29; 33:8; 65:1-8; 66:4-12; 67:7; 86:9; 89:30-33; 98:3; 102:15; 103:9-22; 138 Isa 25:6-9; 26:9-10; 43:5-21; 44:22-28; 45:4-9, 22-24; 49:6; 52:10; 57:16; 61:1-2; 64:8-9; 66:23 Ezek 6:7; 7:3-4, 9, 27; 17:24; 18:4, 23, 32; 20:40-44, 48; 21:5; 22:21-22; 25:7; 28:22-26; 33:11 36:20-36; 39:21-29; 47:9, 12 Zech 14:16	Heb 2:7-17 Job 23:10 Prov 22:2; 30:4 Lam 3:19-38 Hos 13:14	Ex 4:22; 14:4 Jer 31:9 2 Chr 2:6, 6:18			
Ultimate Reconciliation of all things	Mark 3:28-29 John 1:1-5, 9, 14-18; 3:17, 35; 6:44; 12:27-40 Rom 3:23-24; 4:16; 5:8-21; 8:19-23, 28-29; 9:14-27; 10:9-17; 11:5-36; 14:4-12 1 Cor 3:15; 5:5; 8:6; 10:26; 12:6, 13; 15:20-28, 45-58 Eph 1:10, 20-23; 2:1-9; 3:9-21; 4:4-13; 5:22-32 2 Thes 2:11-12 Heb 1:2-3; 2:8-15; 3:4; 5:8-9; 7:27; 8:10-12; 9:12; 10:10; 12:23 2 Pet 1:3-4; 3:9 1 John 3:8; 5:4 Jude 23-24 Rev 1:18; 5:13; 14:6; 15:4; 17:14-17; 21:4-6; 22:1	Matt 5:44-48; 8:16-17; 9:35; 11:28; 12:32; 18:14; 19:25-26; 24:14; 25:46; 28:18 Luke 1:37; 2:10; 3:6; 10:22; 15:4; 19:10; 20:38 Acts 2:21, 39; 3:13-21; 13:47; 17:24-31 James 1:5 2 Cor 4:4-11; 5:10-21; 10:4-6 Phil 2:9-11; 3-21 2 Tim 4:17 Titus 2:11	Dan 2:35; 4:35; 7:27; 12:1-3 James 1:5 2 Cor 4:4-11; 5:10-21; 10:4-6 Col 1:12-29; 3:11			
* NOTE: The ultimate reconciliation of all (some through faith in Jesus' perfect blood sacrifice; others after the destruction of their evil nature in hell) is a common theme in this book. The above references will rarely be repeated, merely noted by an asterisk *, as in the following lesson on Adam.						
Adam	* Ps 2:8; 72:8-11, 18-19; 82:8 1 Cor 8:6	Gen 1 – 3 Heb 1:2-3	Num 14:21 1 Cor 10:13 1 Cor 3:16	Isa 6:3; 11:9 Rom 5:12 Eph 2:15-22	Hab 2:14 John 1:1-5, 14 Eph 3:17-19	Heb 12:5-12 Col 1:16 Hosea 1:2 ff
(2nd page)	Gen 3:5 Isa 57:15	1 John 2:2 Isa 66:1-2	Heb 2:9 Mal 2:15-16	Rom 5:18 Eph 4:15-16	John 3:16-17 Eph 5:23-32	Psalms 33:12 Col 1:18, 22
Oneness	John 17:11 Eph 2:15-22	John 17:20-26 Eph 4:1-13	Rom 8:29-30 2 Pet 1:2-11	Rom 12:5 Col 2:16-23	Gal 3:28 Col 3:1-17	1 Cor 12:12-27
(2nd page)	Heb 5:11 – 6:2 1 Thes 5:20 1 Tim 1:4-6 Matt 5:14-16	Phil 3:12-15 * Heb 6:6 Matt 5:44-48	Heb 11:39-40 Matt 7:6 2 Pet 3:3, 16-18 Luke 23:34	Col 1:24 Prov 26:4-5 Eph 5:6 John 1:5 ff	1 Cor 14:1-5 Luke 24:49 Rom 1:18 ff 1 John 1:7	1 Cor 14:24-33 Acts 1:4-5 John 3:36 1 John 2:8-17

## References (cont.)

Gospel of the  
Kingdom

Lordship	Eph 4:5 ff Acts 17:28 1 Tim 1:17 Rom 11:33 ff Job 11:7-9	1 John 2:20-27 Col 1:17 1 Tim 6:15-16 Daniel 2:20-21, 35, 44, 47; Psalm 25:12-14	Rom 1:25 ff Heb 1:2-3 Rev 5:9-13 4:3, 25, 34-37; Eph 3:17-21	John 8:44 John 4:14; 5:19-21; Rev 15:3-4	1 Cor 12:3 Rev 20:4-6	John 11:25-27 14:12; 15:5-7; 17:1-3 1 Cor 12:11, 18 7:13-14, 18, 22, 27
(2nd page)	Num 12:3 Isa 57:15 Gal 2:20-21 Mark 7:21-22	Matt 11:29-30 Matt 5:16 Phil 1:21-28 Isa 30:20-21	Psalm 25:8-9 1 Pet 2:12 Phil 4:13 Isa 19:23-24	Psalm 37:11 Eph 5:18 1 Cor 2:2-5 Heb 4:15-16	Zeph 2:3 Acts 4:8; 9:17; 13:9 ff 2 Cor 4:4-11 Rom 8:1-27	Matt 5:5 Jer 17:9-10
Light & Darkness	John 1:1-5, 9; 3:19-21; 8:12; 9:3-5; 12:35-36, 46-50 Rom 13:12 ff 1 Tim 1:13	1 John 2:8-11 1 Cor 13:9-12	2 Cor 3:18 1 Cor 8:1-3	Acts 3:17 1 Cor 3:18-20	Eph 5:8-14 Acts 17:30 2 Cor 5:7	1 Thes 5:1-8 Eph 4:18
(2nd page)	*	Isa 41:4; 43:11-13; 44:6-8; 46:10 ff	John 11:25 ff	Acts 9:1-18	Phil 3:10-11	
Truth	John 1:14; 14:6 John 14:17, 26; 15:26; 16:13 John 2:22; 10:35; 19:35-37	John 8:32 John 5:39-40 Acts 1:16	John 18:37 John 5:39-40 Acts 1:16	Psalm 51:6 John 6:63, 68 2 Tim 3:15-16	1 Cor 13:9-12 2 Cor 3:6 James 4:5	1 John 2:20, 27 Rom 2:29 2 Pet 1:20
Scripture	(see above references on Truth) 2 Tim 2:14, 23	1 Tim 6:4	1 Cor 1:17-29; Gen 1:29-30	2:4-16; 3:19-20 Gen 9:3-4	Rom 1:22 ff Lev 3:17; 11	Titus 3:9 Deut 14:1-21
(2nd page)	Psalm 23:1, 4 2 Pet 2:9-10 Psalm 119:41 ff 1 Cor 15:54 ff Psalms 90:1-12; 119:18, 97-104, 165; 138:2	Ezek 16:58 ff John 11:25-26 Prov 3:5 ff Rom 12:4-5	Ezek 23:35, 49 James 1:6 Heb 4:12 1 Cor 12:12 ff	Ezek 44:10-12 Mark 11:23-24 1 Pet 1:23 Eph 5:30, 32 Isa 42:21	Jer 6:14 Matt 14:31 Jer 23:29 Psalm 8:1; 19:1 John 16:13	Psalm 19:13 Matt 21:21 Rom 8:23 Rom 1:19-20 Num 21:8
Error	2 Tim 1:7 Phil 2:5 Col 3:15-16	Rom 8:15 1 Cor 2:16 Phil 4:6-9	John 14:27 Luke 24:45 John 14:27	John 16:13 Acts 17:11 John 16:33	Jude 24 Rom 7:29; 8:7; 11:34; 14:5 2 Thes 2:2	Psalm 56:13 Heb 8:19
(2nd page)	2 Thes 2:10-12 Eph 4:17-23 James 1:5	Matt 15:2-9 Matt 18:1-5 John 7:17	Gal 1:11-16 Matt 19:14 Matt 26:41	Rom 12:2 Luke 18:16-17 Psalm 110:3	2 Cor 3:17 1 Cor 14:26-33 2 Pet 3:3-5	Titus 3:5-6 Eph 1:17-19 Gal 5:13-24
Mystery	Col 1:25 – 2:3 Eph 6:19 Titus 2:14 ff	1 Cor 2:7-8 Col 4:3 Eph 5:25-32	Eph 1:9-10 Rev 10:7 1 Cor 12:9-12	Eph 2:15 – 3:9 1 Cor 15:3-4, 20-23, 28, 51-57	Rom 11:25-36 Gal 4:5 ff	1 Tim 3:16
Freedom II	John 8:32 Luke 11:52 1 Tim 6:3-5 2 Cor 3:5-6	*	Matt 7:21-23 Rom 6:20-23 2 Pet 2:19 ff Gal 5:1, 13 ff	Luke 6:46 ff Col 2:18-23 Rom 2:4 Col 2:6 ff	Matt 25:31-46 Matt 15:8-9 1 John 4:10, 19 1 Pet 2:16-17	Matt 23:13, 15 Eph 4:14 Heb 11:13, 40
Father's Heart	*	John 5:39-40	John 6:63	2 Cor 3:6	Rom 2:29	Psalm 103:7
God's mercy in judgment	Psalms 25:8; 30:5; 36:5-9; 64:9; 67; 86:1-43; 96; 98; 100:5; 103:1-14; 107; 118:1 ff; 126:5; 145 Isa 19:22; 26:9; 28:21-29; 43:25; 53:4-6; 54:7-8; 57:14-19; 59:15-16; 61; 63:3-9; 64:6-9 Jer 3:12, 22; 16:19-21; 36:3 Luke 6:35-38; 11:11-13; 23:34 Zeph 3:8-9 Ezek 18:23 ff	1 Cor 2:7-8 Col 4:3 Eph 5:25-32	Ezek 18:30-32 Rom 5:3-21 Heb 10:26-31 Acts 17:30 ff	Joel 2:10-14 2 Cor 4:1-10, 1 Heb 12:9 ff 1 Tim 2:4-6	Micah 7:18-19 1 John 3:8 1 Tim 1:15	Matt 7:11 James 2:13 Rom 16:20 Titus 3:4-6
Peace III	John 16:33 Rom 5:1-3 ff 1 Thes 5:3 ff Rev 19:14 – 20:4 ff; 21:7 ff Rev 1:16; 2:12, 16 Zeph 1:2-3, 7, 12, 14-18; 2:1-3; 3:8-13, 17 1 Sam 3:19	Matt 10:34 ff Rom 8:6-7 Heb 12:11-14 James 3:17-18 Heb 4:9-13 Psalm 149:5-6 Ezek 25:17 Isa 55:11 Eph 6:17 ff 1 Sam 8:7	Luke 12:49-53 Rom 16:20 James 3:17-18 Heb 4:9-13 Psalm 149:5-6 Ezek 25:17 Isa 55:11 Ex 16:8	Luke 19:41-44 Eph 2:14-17 1 Pet 3:11 ff *	John 14:27 Eph 6:15 ff 2 Pet 3:13-14 2 Cor 5:14 – 6:10; 10:3-7; 13:1	Rom 3:10-18 Col 1:20 ff Rev 6:4 Matt 5:9-16 Isa 59:21 Rom 10:8-17 Rom 14:10-12

Community	Matt 7:13-14 Ezek 6:6-7 Psalm 9:6	1 Cor 3:17 Lev 26:31 Ezek 35:9	1 John 3:1-6 Isa 1:7; 5:8; 6:11; 14:21; 24:10, 12; 25:2 Hosea 8:14	Gen 11:6-9 2 Pet 2:6-9	Gen 1:28 Acts 1:14; 2:42-47; 4:24-35	Ezek 35:4, 9 Jer 49:13; 50:32
(2nd page)	Rom 12:4-16 Job 31:24-28	1 Cor 12:4-28; Jer 49:4-5	14:26-33 Rev 18:10 f	2 Cor 6:14 – 7:1 John 14:1-31; 5:1-5; 17:21	Psalm 49:6 2 Cor 4:4-6	Psalm 52:7
(3rd page)	Prov 3:5-6 Gal 2:20	Psalm 37:3-5 Heb 6:1 ff	Eph 5:30-32 Matt 15:1-9	Col 1:27 – 2:6 Col 2:8	2 Cor 3:1 – 4:1 Mark 7:8 ff	Phil 1:21 Rev 14:8; 17:5
Life & Death II	Gen 1:28; 2:7 1 Cor 15:26 ff Matt 3:11-12 Gal 2:20; 5:24	Eph 2:1-6 Rev 14:8-12; 19:20; 20:10-15 Mark 9:43-49 1 Cor 2:11-16	Job 26:5 Ezek 36:27 ff Eph 4:23-24	Psalms 107:17-20; 116:3 Jude 12 Jer 31:33-34 1 Cor 12:7	1 Pet 4:5-6 Rom 6:4 ff *	Luke 16:23 ff 1 Pet 3:18-20 Col 2:12 ff
(2nd page)	Rom 6:16, 23	Rom 8:5-14	Gal 6:7-8	Rom 5:8-21	James 1:8; 4:8	Gal 5:16-25
Doctrine of the unforgivable sin	Matt 12:31-37 2 Pet 2:19-21	Matt 10:14-20 1 John 5:16-17	Mark 3:28-29 Num 15:30	Luke 12:4--10 Deut 29:20 ff	Heb 6:4-6 Acts 7:51-52	Heb 10:26-31 1 Thes 5:19
Destruction of the wicked	1 Cor 5:5 Psalm 92:7-9 Matt 10:28	Isa 34:1-10 Acts 3:23	Ezek 15:7; 21:4-5; 22:21-22; 25:7, 15-17; 26:21; 32:12-15; 35	2 Pet 2:12; 3:7 1 Cor 3:17	James 4:12 Jer 7:20; 17:4, 27; 21:12	Rev 11:18
Unquenchable fire	Isa 34:8-10 Mark 9:43-49 Isa 14:12-20	Isa 66:24 Heb 12:29 ff Ezek 28:12-19	Amos 5:6 Rev 14:10-11 Isa 10:8; 55:11	2 Kings 22:17 Mal 3:2-5 Phil 1:6	1 Cor 3:13 ff *	2 Pet 3:10-13 Isa 14:24; 46:10
Spirit, Soul, Body	Gen 2:7, 9 Rom 8:14; 9:18 2 Cor 3:18	Gen 3:22, 24 Gal 3:25 – 4:7 2 Cor 5:17-21	Rev 2:7; 22:2, 14, 19 Eph 4:12-13 ff Matt 6:19-30	Eph 5:30-32 Deut 30:15-20	Prov 3:13-18; 11:30; 15:4 Eph 1:20-23 Deut 32:39	Rev 12:5; 14:4 *
(2nd page)	Gen 2:17 1 Cor 15:22, 45	Rom 6:23 Rom 5:12-21	Eph 2:1-3 Rom 9:11, 17	1 Tim 5:6 Rom 9:19-23	James 1:15 Eph 1:11; 3:11	Matt 10:28 2 Tim 1:9
(3rd page)	Gen 2:7 Isa 26:8-9 1 Thes 5:23 Titus 3:5 Rom 6:11 ff	Lev 17:11 Matt 10:28 Heb 10:39 1 Cor 6:11 Ezek 18:4, 20	Deut 11:13 Matt 16:25-26 1 Pet 2:11 Acts 22:16 John 17:3	Deut 13:3 Mark 12:33 2 Pet 2:8 ff Num 8:7 1 John 5:20	Psalms 19:7; 49:8; 78:50; 89:48 John 8:44 Eph 5:26 Num 19:11-13 Prov 8:36	Acts 4:32 Heb 10:22 2 Cor 7:1 John 11:43 ff
(4th page)	Eph 4:4 ff Matt 13:38 ff Matt 13:24-50 John 16:33 Rev 5:9-10	John 15:5 ff Mark 4:15 ff John 8:44, 55 1 Cor 15:18, 20 Rom 8:29-30	* Rom 14:17 ff Rom 3:4 Acts 7:60 Eph 4:13-15	John 5:24-29 Eph 2:1-6 1 John 2:22 Matt 27:52 Col 1:28	John 6:54-63 Col 2:13 ff Rom 8:37 Mark 5:41	1 John 5:10-13 Luke 15:24 ff 1 Cor 15:57 Heb 11:40; 12:1

1

## Volume 4

Prayer II	Acts 6:4 Phil 2:5-13 Heb 1:3	Gen 2:17; 3:5 Rom 8:26-27 Col 1:17	Rev 19:16 Rom 1:17 Heb 2:10	Rom 11:33 Rom 14:4-9, 23 1 Cor 8:6	Isa 55:6-9 2 Cor 5:7 Eph 5:32 ff	1 Cor 2:16 James 2:18-26 Rev 19:7
(2nd page)	Heb 11 Matt 18:18-20 John 16:23-24	Psalm 66:18 James 5:16 1 John 5:14-15	Job 27:8-9 Matt 21:22 ff Matt 1:21	Prov 1:28-29 Mark 11:24 ff 1 John 1:7 ff	Prov 28:9 John 14:13-14	John 9:31 John 15:7, 16
(3rd page)	2 Cor 3:14; 4:4 2 Cor 3:18	1 Cor 2:14-16 Gal 2:20	Phil 2:5	Col 3:1-11	Rom 12:2	Eph 4:23-24
Sons of God	Rom 8:14-23 Eph 2:6 Matt 24:21-51 Mal 4:2	1 Pet 1:5 Rom 6:11 Matt 25:1-30 Eph 5:13-14	Heb 4:25 Psalm 2:7 Mark 13:19-37 2 Pet 1:19	1 Cor 13:10 ff Heb 2:10; 5:8-9 Luke 21:28-36 Prov 4:18	1 John 3:2 Eccl 3:1 ff Matt 24:27 Dan 12:1-3	Rom 8:29-30 Dan 7:22 Luke 1:78-79 Joel 2:1-11





Lamb's Book of Life (3rd page)	Rev 19:9 ff Col 1:18; 2:19 Matt 6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8	Rev 14:1-4 ff 1 Thes 5:9	Rev 7:4 Rev 12:17 1 Cor 15:23	Rev 12:5 Phil 3:14 Rom 8:14-29	Matt 25:1 ff 1 Cor 9:27 Like 14:23 ff	Rev 21:2 ff Heb 2:10-11 Eph 3:15
Sheep and Goats	Rev 20:4-6 Eph 2:7 ff Matt 10:16-20	Gen 1:28 1 Cor 12:10 ff Matt 10:26-28	Psalm 8:4-8 1 John 4:7 ff Phil 4:6-7	Heb 2:6-8 Matt 19:21 ff Psalm 37:1-8	Rev 22:17 Mark 10:21 ff Matt 25:31-46	Rom 6:4-14 James 2:10 Rev 20:11-15
Lake of Fire	Rev 14:10-11; 18:9; 19:3, 20; Luke 16:24 ff	18:9; 19:3, 20; 20:10-15; 21:8; 22:15 Jude 7	1 John 5:16 *		Matt 25:41	Mark 9:43-49
Heaven & Hell II God's grace given to all	Prov 8:35-36 John 1:14-17 Matt 5:45 Obad 15 Rom 2:8 ff	Prov 18:21 Rom 5:17-21 Psalm 78:32-39 Prov 24:17-20 1 Cor 13:4-8	1 John 3:14 2 Cor 9:8 2 Tim 3:2-7 James 5:1-8	Eph 2:5-8; 4:7 1 John 4:8-18 Matt 23:25 John 5:38-47	Phil 1:7 Matt 23:25 John 5:38-47	Jude 4 Luke 9:25
Paradise "The Day" Judgment Day The Last Day	Isa 2:11-21; 4:1-4; 10:20-23; 13:6-12; 24:19-23; 27:1, 12-13; 30:25-33; 34:8; 61:2; 63:4; 66:15 Jer 33:15; 46:10; 50:20-28 Dan 12:1-7 Zeph 1:7-18; 2:1-3; 3:8-13 Matt 7:2, 22; 12:36; 24:29-36 ff; 25:31 ff, 42-44; 25:13, 31-46 Luke 17:22-33; 21:27 ff Rom 2:5-11; 14:8-12 Phil 1:6 Heb 9:27; 10:25-31; 12:26-29 1 John 4:17-18	4:1-4; 10:20-23; 13:6-12; 24:19-23; 27:1, 12-13; 30:25-33; 34:8; 61:2; 63:4; 66:15 50:20-28 Joel 1:15; 2:1-11, 28-32; 3:1-3, 14 ff Hag 2:6-9, 21 John 6:39-40, 54; 11:24; 12:48 1 Cor 1:7-8; 3:11-15; 5:5 1 Thes 3:13; 4:13-17; 5:1-5 1 Pet 1:13; 4:5-7, 17-19 Rev 1:7, 10; 6:17; 11:15-18; 14:9-12, 14-20; 19:2-3; 20:11-15	13:6-12; 24:19-23; 27:1, 12-13; 30:25-33; 34:8; 61:2; 63:4; 66:15 Ezek 7:1-27; 13:5; 30:3; 38:10-23; 39:8 ff 3:1-3, 14 ff Zech 12:9-11; 13:1-2; 14:1-9 Mark 9:43-48; 13:24 ff John 6:39-40, 54; 11:24; 12:48 Acts 3:21; 10:42; 17:31 2 Cor 5:10 2 Thes 1:4-10; 2:1-8 James 2:13; 5:7-8 2 Cor 6:16 Eph 2:21-22 *	30:25-33; 34:8; 61:2; 63:4; 66:15 38:10-23; 39:8 ff Amos 5:18 Mal 3:2-5; 4 Mark 9:43-48; 13:24 ff Acts 3:21; 10:42; 17:31 2 Cor 5:10 Eph 4:30 James 2:13; 5:7-8 2 Pet 1:19; 2:9; 3:5-12 14:9-12, 14-20; 19:2-3; 20:11-15 Heb 2:2 Psalm 89:14 Isa 9:6 Isa 54:10-17 Psalm 25:8-9 Rev 2:7 Psalm 36:7-9 Eph 2:21-22 *	61:2; 63:4; 66:15 Dan 7:21-27 Obad 15 Mal 3:2-5; 4 Mark 9:43-48; 13:24 ff Acts 3:21; 10:42; 17:31 Eph 4:30 James 2:13; 5:7-8 2 Pet 1:19; 2:9; 3:5-12 14:9-12, 14-20; 19:2-3; 20:11-15 Isa 9:6 Psalm 25:8-9 Psalm 36:7-9 Eph 2:21-22 *	
Animals	Isa 57:15 Job 38:39-41; 39; 40:15-24; 41 Matt 6:26 Rom 8:21 ff	Rom 8:20 ff John 10:3-4 ff 1 Tim 5:18 Isa 65:25	Isa 24: 4-6 ff John 10:3-4 ff 1 Tim 5:18 Isa 11:6-9	Num 22:28 ff Gen 3:13-15 2 Pet 1:4 Job 5:22-23	Isa 1:3 Isa 27:1 Isa 34:11-17 Ezek 34:25	Matt 10:29 Rev 20:2 2 Cor 5:18-21 Hosea 2:18
The Sword	Rev 19:15, 21 2 Tim 4:2 Psalm 96:11-13	Rev 1:16 Col 1:18-29 Psalm 98:7-9	Isa 49:2 Eph 6:17 Psalm 67:4	Isa 11:4 Matt 10:34-39 Isa 26:9	Psalm 149:5-9 Luke 12:49-51 Isa 13:9; 54:8	Heb 4:12 Psalm 7:11-13 Hab 3:2 Prov 27:5-6
(2nd page)	Psalm 141:5 1 Thes 5:17-22 Psalm 64	Prov 25:11-12 Eph 4:18; 30-3 Eph 6:12, 18 ff	Eccl 7:5 John 8:44 ff Gal 5:13-25	Gal 6:1 James 4:6-10 John 8:31-36	2 Thes 3:15 Prov 1:2-10; 10:11-14; 15:1, 18 Heb 12:6-11	James 5:19-20 Luke 2:34-35
Home	Psalm 127:2 John 14:2; 15:4 Psalm 84	Prov 1:8; 2:1-11; 3:1-8; 4; 5:1-2; 6:20-23; 7:1-4; 10:1; 13:1 Heb 3:1-6 Psalm 139:7-12	1 Tim 3:15 Isa 33:14-16	1 Cor 3:16 Rom 8:9-11	Isa 57:15 Phil 1:21-25	2 Cor 5:1-8 Psalm 68:5-6 Heb 11:13-16
(2nd page)	1 John 2:15-17 Gen 2:7-8, 15	Matt 10:34 Isa 45:18	Ex 20:8-11 Psalm 115:16	Ex 31:13-17 Psalm 8:6	Isa 46:8-11 2 Cor 5:19 ff	Gen 1:26-31 Luke 17:20-21
Kingdom of Heaven	Matt 3:2; 4:17; 5:3, 10, 19-20; 2 Pet 3:6-13 Isa 34:16-17	4:17; 5:3, 10, 19-20; 7:218:11-12; 11:11-12; 13:11, 24, 31, 33; 16:19; 18:1-4; 23:13 Matt 24:35 Isa 60:21	Rev 21:1 Joel 3:20	Isa 24:19-20 1 Cor 15:54-57	Isa 34:4 Rev 20:4-6	Psalm 37:29 Rev 21:1-10

Shepherd	Jer 3:15; 23:4 1 Tim 5:17	Ezek 34:23 1 Cor 15:10	Heb 13:7, 17 Psalm 23:1-3	Eph 5:21 Psalm 85:9-13	1 Cor 16:16, 18 Prov 4:11; 8:20	1 Thes 5:12-13 1 Cor 7:23
Religious leaders telling lies	Psalm 119:69 Isa 9:14-16	Prov 29:12 Isa 59:4	Jer 14:14; 16:19; Hos 7:3, 13 ff	23:30-32; 27:10; Zech 13:2-4 ff	25:15; 29:31 John 8:44 ff	1 Tim 4:1-3 Zech 10:2
Our freedom in Christ	John 8:31-36 2 Cor 3:17 ff	Isa 61:1 Gal 2:4; 5:1-18	Luke 4:18-21 James 1:25	Rom 8:2, 21 ff James 2:12	1 Cor 8:9 ff 1 Pet 2:16 ff	1 Cor 10:23-33
Bound to doctrine and traditions	Col 2:8 1 Pet 1:18	Matt 15:1-9 Matt 16:12	Mark 7:8 ff Eph 4:14	Luke 11:38 ff 1 Tim 1:3-11	Heb 6:1 ff 1 Tim 6:3-4	Gal 1:14 ff 2 Tim 4:3
"The letter kills"	2 Cor 3:6 Ezek 34:13-30	Rom 2:27-29 Ezek 37:24-28	Rom 7:6 Col 1:18; 2:19	John 5:39; 6:63 1 Cor 12:12, 27	2 Pet 1:3-11 2 Pet 1:3-11	1 Pet 4:1-2, 19
Christ Head of the many-membered body	1 John 3:1-10 Matt 23:8-10	Matt 13:44-46 Rom 12:4-5	Matt 15:12-14 1 Cor 6:15, 17-20;	Rom 5:15-21 8:6; 10:16-17;	12:11-20, 27 2 Cor 5:14-17	Gal 3:28; 4:19 Eph 1:10, 22-23;
(2nd page)	John 14:9 Heb 6:6	Eph 5:21 2 Tim 3:5	1 Pet 5:5	Col 1:27-28	Eph 4:1, 11-13	Heb 13:7, 17
Fear	1 Tim 4:1 Prov 1:7; 8:1 – 9:6; Psalm 33:18-22;	Psalm 27:1 9:10; 15:33 34:8-14; 60:4;	John 10:3-4, 9, John 14:16-17, 26;	14-16, 26-28 15:26; 16:1	Job 28:28 John 14:27; 16:33;	Psalm 111:10 20:21-22
(2nd page)	Isa 8:13-14; 29:13; Acts 9:31 Eccl 12:13-14	33:5-6 Rom 3:18 ff Psalm 23:4	Jer 10:7 ff; 32:38-41; Eph 5:21 Luke 19:40	33:9 Rev 11:18; 14:7; Num 22:28	Mal 1:6, 14 15:4; 19:5 Isa 9:6	Luke 1:50 Job 1:1
(3rd page)	Prov 11:14; 15:22; 1 Cor 15:26 ff Rev 14:7-12 Col 1:16-20 1 Pet 2:17	24:6 2 Tim 1:10 Heb 4:1 Matt 6:31-34 Gen 12:12; 20:2-11;	Gal 1:16-2:2 ff Isa 25:8 ff Jude 23 Isa 51:7, 12-13	Rom 8:15 2 Pet 3:11 ff Jer 42:16 Matt 10:26-33 1 Sam 15:24	Heb 2:14-15 Heb 12:25-29 Ezek 11:8-10 Luke 12:4-7, 32	Matt 8:26 ff Rev 18:10, 15 Psalm 50:10-12 Heb 13:6 John 12:42-43
Sabbath Rest III	Eph 2:6 Rom 8:29-10 Rom 2:11-16	Heb 3:18 – 4:11 1 John 1:7-10 Acts 17:30 ff	Phil 1:6 Rom 6:7, 11 ff Rom 3:23; 5:12-21;	1 Cor 1:78-9 Eph 1:4; 4:17-18, 24, 26	1 Thes 5:23-24 Rom 1:19	Heb 10:14
Law II	Heb 8:8-13 John 1:1-5 Ex 23:12	Jer 31:31-37 Joshua 1:8 Deut 5:14	Heb 10:16-18 Ex 19:4-8 Ezek 20:11-13	Ezek 36:22-28 Ex 20:1-20 Lev 18:5	Psalm 119:97 ff Deut 5:29 ff Gal 3:11-12	Gen 1:2 Mark 2:27-28 Psalm 19:7-11
(2nd page)	Heb 12:11 ff 1 Cor 13:10 2 Cor 3:2-6	James 1:2-5 2 Cor 5:19 Prov 7:1-4	1 Pet 4:13 Rom 8:19 ff Ezek 11:1-20	Matt 6:21 Psalm 119:11 Rom 7:6 ff	Luke 6:31-34 Psalm 37:31 Matt 22:37-40	Rev 21:9-11 Psalm 40:7-8 Isa 58:6-14
(3rd page)	Heb 4:3-4, 10 John 10:35	1 Tim 4:10 Luke 16:17	1 Tim 6:17 2 Pet 1:3-11	Lev 10:9-10 1 Tim 6:17	Lev 11 Acts 14:16-17	Matt 5:17-19 Rom 8:2
Thanksgiving	Luke 17:9-10 2 Cor 9:11-15 Eph 5:4, 20	Col 3:15-17 Heb 13:15 Rom 14:6	Psalm 100 Rev 4:9-11; 5:9-14;	Rom 1:21 ff 7:9-12 Eph 1:15-16	1 Cor 15:57 *	2 Cor 2:14; 4:1 1 Tim 4:3-5
Unity	Ex 19:5-6 Eph 4:3-4, 13	Deut 7:6-15; 14:2; Eph 2:16-22	26:17-19 1 Cor 12:4-13	Eph 1:11-23 Rom 11:29	*	Rom 8:16 Psalm 110:4
(2nd page)	Deut 6:4 ff Rev 1:8 Psalm 50:10-12	Deut 4:35, 39 *	Gen 17:1 Col 1:16-20	Ex 3:12-15 Psalm 139	Ex 6:2-8 2 Tim 2:13	John 8:58 John 4:24
(3rd page)	Hos 2:18 Col 3:11 Col 1:24	Psalm 24:1 Psalm 103:19	Deut 10:14 Psalm 104:1-30	Acts 17:25-28 Psalm 145:8-21	1 Cor 12:20-27 1 Tim 1:17	Isa 43:20 Rom 11:36 Phil 3:10 2 Cor 5:18 ff

Fasting and Intercession	Isa 58:5-23 Isa 53:11-12	Joel 1:14; 2:15 Rom 8:26-27, 34; 11:2-5	Matt 6:16-18	Psalm 69:5-13 Heb 7:25	Matt 17:21 1 Tim 2:1-4	Mark 9:29 Isa 59:16
“Standing in the gap”	Isa 63:1-6 1 Cor 10:31	Lev 16:29; 23:27 (afflict / humble your souls = fasting to the Hebrew mind) Col 3:17	Eph 1:15-16 Col 1:9			
Life of the ages = eternal life	Matt 19:16-22; 25:46 John 3:15-16, 36; 4:14, 36; 5:24, 39; 6:27, 35, 47, 54, 68; 10:10, 28; 12:25; 14:6; 15:4; 17:2-3 1 Tim 6:12	Acts 13:46-48	Rom 2:4-8; 5:21; 6:23			Gal 6:8
(2nd page)	Gal 5:17 1 Thes 5:23 2 Cor 4:18; 5:7	Rom 7:18, 23; 8:5-11 1 John 4:1-4 Heb 11:1, 13	Matt 11:29-30 Rom 8:28-39	Ezek 36:26-28 Heb 4:3-4, 10 2 Cor 5:18-21	John 3:5-6 Heb 2:8 ff Heb 3:6, 14	John 6:63 1 Cor 15:25-28 Heb 6:11-19
Good News	*	Luke 12:32	Rom 8:22-23	Rev 12:5	1 Cor 13:12 ff	
(2nd page)	Isa 11:6 1 Cor 1:18-21, 27-28; 2:6-16 John 15:18-20 Matt 11:25	Matt 18:2-4 1 John 2:15-21	Mark 10:14-15 Matt 13:11-17	Luke 18:15-17 John 12:40 Matt 7:1 ff 2 Pet 3:5 ff	Matt 13:44-46 Isa 6:10 Luke 23:34 Eph 4:17-18	Matt 7:6 Col 1:26 Jer 16:19
(3rd page)	*	1 John 3:8	Luke 14:26	Matt 10:37	Luke 9:23	John 13:35
(4th page)	1 Cor 11:29 ff	Heb 4:12	Eph 4:14-16	1 John 5:3-4	*	

## Volume 5

The Kingdom is Come	Matt 10:38-39; 16:24-25 Heb 12:26-29 Rev 14:4	Job 13:15 Heb 2:8-9	Mark 8:34-38 Heb 11:19 1 John 3:2	Luke 9:23-26; 14:27; 17:33 Isa 53:4-6 John 17:24	John 12:25 Gen 1:3 2 Cor 3:18	S of S 2:10-13
(2nd page)	John 14:6 Gen 5:24 Col 1:27 – 2:10	John 1:14 Job 1:1 John 15:1-5	Job 38:4-7 Heb 7:1-3 Col 1:16-20	Psalms 65:8, 13; 66:4; 96; 98:8 Isa 53:2-3 Heb 4:9-12	Prov 1:20-23; 8 Matt 5:5; 11:29; 21:5 Rom 8:19-22 Rev 12:5	
(3rd page)	1 John 3:2 Rom 8:17-23 Gal 3:23-25	1 Pet 5:10 Heb 2:10-18 Gal 5:18 ff	Phil 3:10 Rom 2:11-16 Rom 8:1-4	Col 1:24 Rom 7:5, 7-11 Heb 12:5 ff	1 Pet 1:3-11 Gal 3:10-12 Matt 5:17-20	1 Pet 4:13-19 James 2:9-11 Matt 16:18 ff
(4th page)	Eccl 1:2 Rev 7:17; 21:4 Matt 11:28-30 2 Cor 5:19-21	Col 2:21-23 Isa 25:8; 35:3-10; 45:20-22; 49:13; 53:4-6, 11; 61:1-3; 63:9; 64:6-9; 65:18-19 f 1 John 4:7-21 Ezek 37:4-14	Gal 4:3, 9-10; 5:19-21; 6:7-8 Rev 13:8 1 Pet 1:22-25	Matt 7:22-23, 26 ff; 25:41-46 Rev 17:14 Isa 61 – 62	Rom 8:35-37 Rom 8:18-23	* Rom 16:20



## CONTACT INFORMATION



To order additional copies of this book, please visit  
[www.redemption-press.com](http://www.redemption-press.com).  
Also available on [Amazon.com](http://Amazon.com) and [BarnsandNoble.com](http://BarnsandNoble.com)  
or by calling toll free 1-844-2REDEEM.

